

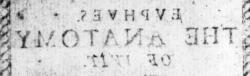
Very pleafant for all Gentlement to reade, and most necessarie to remember.

VV herein are contained the delights that Wit followeth in his youth, by the pleafantnelle of lone: and the happinelle he resagned in age, by the perhittings of

By John Lylie, Maister of Art.

Corrected and augmented.

Printed by I. Roberts for Gabriell
Cawood, dwelling in Paules
Churchyarde.



Very perfent for Concerner to realest to realest to realest to realest to

VV herein age (continued the delights that Wit followed in his worth, by shepica- famelle office and the impinelle he recurrently in the factoring of the second continue of the second

s By John Lylie, Maister of Arr.

Corrested and symenical.

Printed by I. Roberts for Gabriell
Cawood, dwelling in Paules
Churchyarde.



Level of the wife, or too toolife to bee recented of the learner

on the north implication the injurie of the diathour, but so the ne kight ronourable my verie Lorde and Marker Sie VV Illiam VVest hKnight, Lord de never dhe toftewith out breach of uno round 1 to the 15th our his wife dorne without sufpi-tion of duling the And certical subjection be more freeches which ewill millife the foolffi, then volcemely rearmes, which

> len (Right Honourable) made theattire of her head bole, who beeing demathated why hee did to sun

fwered, thee was look. Vulcan was painted curroufty, yet with a block took. Tada cumingly, yet with
her black havre. Alekahder having a skarre in his
cheeke, held by singer your it, that Apelles might not raint it. A
pelles painted harry in his singer cleaning to his face, why quoth A
lexander Tlayd my finger only skarre because I woulde not have theeles it year and Apeles) and I arewe it there became home es Thould percent it, for If thy finger had beene away, exthat thy skar would hade beene leene, or my Art inflifted : whereby I gather, that hall perfect works, as well the fault as the face is to be thewen. The fairest Leopard is made with his sportes, the finest cloth with his life the smoothest shock with his last. Seeing their that in every counter-saire, as well the Blemish as the beautie is coloured, I hope I shall no meurie the dipleatire of the wile, in that in the dicourse of Eurifices. I have as well routhed the Vanines of his love, as the vertues of his life. The Perlins, who about all other kines most honored Cyrus, and fed him to be engraven as well with his hooked note, as his high forhe mis for med Alexander Holt, bewrived by quating. Dimondes the hold of his wife foote, Damodes afmooth that the country of the property of t

close for his hraight hand each rise of a condition of the condition of th

natomie.

hart. If thep the fi read of the wife, or too foolish to bee regarded of the learned, they ought not to impute, it to the iniquitie of the Authour, but to the nocessity of the Hilbery. Euphness beganneth withiloue, as allured by with but endeth not with luft, as bereft of wifedome. He wooth women prouelled by youth, but weldeth not himselfe to wantomelle as pricked by pleasure. It have fee the matthe follies of his wit without breach of modelty, and the louries of his will dome without suspicion of dishonestie. And certes I thinke there be moe speeches which for granitie will millike the foolish, then vnseemely tearmes, which for wantte may offend the wife. Which discourse ( right Honours-hle) I hope you will the rather pardon for the rudenes, in that it is the first, and protect in the more willingly it a offende, in that it is

were, the was look and an arms of the was look and and said and an arms of the was look and an arms of the said and arms of the said arms of th an Oxe, he would prove himselfe a Calle; or it the Horseleach wold adventure to manuter a potion to a licke patient, in that hee hath knowledge to give a drench to a dileafed Horie, he would make himelfe an Affe. The Shoomaker must not goe about his latcher, nor the Hedger meddle with any thing but his bill. It is volcemely for the Painter to feather a shart, or the Fletcher to handle the pensil. All which things make most against mee, in that a foole bath intruded himfele to discourse of wit; but as I was willing to gommit the fault, to am I content to make amends. How locuer the case standieth, looke for no prayle for my labour, but pardon for my good will it is the greatest reward that I dare aske, and the least that they can offer, the greatest reward that I dare use, will the least that the value of the nothing delight the dainty east of the currous lifter, yet will the matter recreate the minds of the currous Reader; the varietie of the one will abate the barlines of the other. Things of greatest profit are lette foorth with the things of the other. hardness of the other. Things of greatest profit are lette footh with least prace, where the VV inc is neate there needeth no due buth the right Corrall needeth no colouring, where the matter it left bringeth credite, the man with his glote winnest finall commendation. It is therefore mee thinkern, a greater they of a pregnant wa, then perfect wiledome, in a thing of furnician excellent is, to vie imperficults of pregnant was the perfect.

### JIT The Epiftle Dedicatorie. T

ee your los in inh

quence. VVe commonly fee that a blacke ground doth best beseeme a white counterfaite, & Venus according to the judgement of Mars, was then most amiable, when she far close by Vulcan. If these things be true which experience trieth, that a naked tale doth most truly for forth the naked truth, that where the countenstince is faire; there neede no colours, that painting is meeter for ragged walls then fine Marble, that Veritie then thinneth most bright, when thee is in least branesie I shall fatif he mine owne minde though I cannot feed their humors, which greatly feeke after those which fift the finest Meale, and beare the whitest mouthes. It is a world to fee howe Englishmen defire to heare finer speech themsheyr language will allow, to eate finer bread then is made of wheater for weare finner cloth then is made of wall; but I let passe they tinenesse, which can no way excuse my folly If your Lordhip shalkaccept my good will, which I have a waies defined. I will patiently beare the ill will of the malitious, which be sparcewaring, because they be planty, and Brokes be Abourdab tourin I

Thus committing thys simple Pamphlet to your Lordships Patronage, and your Honour to the Almighties protection; for the prefernation of the which, as most bounden, I will pray continually, erous of the five, nor the . Stray- role of the of sint an animaber!

Tow Worfhips fermannt to Mit Booke bit an Sharre son Men at stime of the command, fobri Lylic. Steedhelte bereker in nort fomy latinis to Liberraning

author a tortus recombine

ner. Hert hat commoth in him there e he would be become at the side of the the fact that the same of the the the color of the ment he fact that he elect hedgetheriailt for bestabour. be thou and ort of me, no there are b Streford this for any denotion in that, but for a which the trans Patron Hone write never formel, examine hade it and wine be never foill, be that theafe fome. Time bead, malfring a greet with me, if all be not omines, and flateriers a family than "ve carrante but the is right int de tot bir that I lideth at will award is, a differ that hierbir, see it. Emile brangeth, but drawe, and blood the mele or have more winge to guip, their might to cit. Habiti in the tothe red command of the mife, and line esteementer confure of Foles e the one will bee for ied with rea-(m, the tiber are to be amplaced with some, "I am is continuen intinit no facili without can fer and be new title of ofer as dof you Thansen as for othere, Cours and his story realists, June never meant to make them my fire ver.

1077201

## TO THE GENTLE

quence. VVe commonly State Acie cround loth belt beleame a white counterfaire, exist back a whole from independent of Mars, when medianishle, when fire the code by Vulcan, Herier things

TVV as driven into a quandarie Gentlemen, whether I might fend this me Pamphles to the Printer, or to the Budler : I thought it too badde for the Profe, and the good for the packe, but feeing my folly in writing to be Is at great as otherty ! Was Willing my fortune froulde het as il as arrest Weeroninonly fee the Books that at Easter lyeth bound oil the Stationers Rall; at Christmaffeto be broken in the Haberda bearfhop, which fich itid the order of proceeding dant content this Sommer to buttern a doorings read for stoy, that in Winten they may be readle for traffer it is not france when us the grantell wender luffeth bee mine Haves that whe've worke Ibould not endure but there monether Gentlemen Wahankes us Gentlewed nion handle the inflowers who in the morning flicks them in they's beads, and attained fricter about they beeles. Thereis by of al forter to be thorrow ripe, because they be plenty, and Bookes be stute when they be printed will that they be common . It'my winds Printers and Tagler Lare chiefly bosmed to pray for Gentleme, the one but fundant fameafles to print the ather fuch fundry falbions to make, that the profiling your of the one in never out of the fire, nor the Printing-preffe of the other at any time lyers. fill. But a fathion is but a dayes wearing, and a Booke but an bowers reading; which feeing it is fo, I am of the Shoomakers minde, who careth not fo the from bolde the plucking on, nor 1, fo my labours last the running ouer. Hee that commeth in print because be would bee knowne, is like the toole that commeth into the Market because he would be seene. I am not be that feeketh praife for bis labour; but pardon for bis offence, neyther doe 1 fette forth this for any denotion in Print, but for duty which I owe to my Patron. If one write neuer fo well, be cannot pleafe all, and write be neuer so ill, be shall please some. Fine beads will picke a quarrell with me, if all be not curious, and flatterers a thanke if any thing be current : but this is my minde, let bim that findeth a fault amend it, and bim that liketh it, De it. Emie braggeth, but draweth no blood : the malitious have more minde to quip, then might to cut. I submit my felfe to the judgement of the wife, and little effective the censure of foles: the one will bee satisfied with reafin, the other are to be aunfwered with filence. I know Gentlemen wil find no fault without cause, and beare with those that deserve blame; as for others, Leare not for theyr iests, for I never meant to make them my Indges.

Farewell.



quer a wh was been

rebi

lee

re

W

利ル

-

# To my very good friends, the Gentle

there is no printed that nievetha paroon, nerither is no printed that nievetha paroon, nerither is there any contilies to be after, injered commissionis granules. I specific Centles ment, not to excuse the mether of the paroofic them, but to offer a defence tobered the missions.

but to offen a befence libere I was millightin A brake with plainnelle , and the modellie to brave with paticucaliff from reported aftiontes and belieftes of many, that his most Excheels and there the attention is an about Animal's dire teford mantim much tittler befachben befandet! of found the entrious hanc picket with by whation, up the curious by tout, in the guilty by their others gulled confeitness! butthis May that I was as faire from thinking illy as I fines them for impingspeak. But of a field goo about to make d Chanfaulty in for it faitiffe, and Could the las implette: libinhoulker fittentlingtoto ophetingto obligate the salter he constitut timbiliteithechooliff. Dinery depotent ner thought his cloth black butitl it was burned. Tricket he estimate et, impare li ed Euphines (male interés policies (list to Lybe inhomistra you note "Petandy Historic the rest money mbinde de saltaire de connets su prof (1) The thought more that he did be the bit ma L despite nice Pather, in fending stee into the Countrie to nurse, where I tirevat a dry breast their peeres, and was at the last inforced to weathe my selfe. But it was bestinie, for if I had not beine gathered from the tree in the bud, I Chould being. blowne

To the Gentlemen Schollers &c.

blowne fane proped a blatt : and as good it is to be an addle Eg, as an idle Eiro.

Euphues at his arrival I am astures will viewe Oxford, where he wil either recent his fayings, or renue his coplaints, he is now on the feas, and how he hath been tosted I know not, but whereas I thought to receive him at Douer, I must meete him at Hampton. Pothing can hinder his comming but death, neither any thing hasten his departure but bukindnes.

Concerning my felfe, I have alwayes thought fo reverents ly of Oxford, of the Schollers, and of the manners, that I feed med to be rather an Julatrev then a blafphemer . They that invented this toy were unwife, and they that reported it in kind, and yet none of them can prone me buboneft . But fine pole I alaunced at fome abufes . Did not lupicers Cage baing forth as well Helen's light bullufe in earth . as Caltona light Harre in beauen ? The Elirich that taketh the greateff vzine in her feathers, picketh fome of the world out, and burneth them; There is no Tree but bath fome blaft , no countenannes but hath forme blemith : and thall Oxford then be blamelette : 13 with it were fo. but Arannot think it is fo. But as it is it may be better, and were it badder, it is not the world. Athink there are few Univertities that have leffe faults then Oxford, many that have more, none but have force. But A commit my cause to the confciences of those that evther know what Tam, or van gette what & thould be, the one will answer theutfeldes it cons Arning friendlie, the other if I knew them; I woolbe fatififie: reafonably.

Thus loth to incur the suspicion of bakindnes in not telling my minde, and not willing to make any excuse inhere there need no amends, I can neither exame parbonalists Thouse considering memning, deaft. I show be thought a spole, And to I em, yours allowed to be.

playedik Lindolpouber, in fending niet liefe the Countrie to nurse, where I tiret at a dry breaktipte year explosions at the

aft inforeed to weane my felfe. But it ings bell nie, feat gi

sattle lu



Ca.

ord, nts, not, ete

ith,

nto

bat

m.

na

tic

in n.

ut

3

g

re

9

se.

n

Z.

3

£!

11

# EVPHVES.

Here dwelt in Athens a young Gentleman of great patrimonie, and of so comite a personage, that it was doubted whether he were more bound to Pature so, the liniaments of his person, or to Fortune so, the increase of his postesions. But

Pature impatient of comparisons, and as it were diffaining a companion or copartner in her working, added to this comit neffe of his body, fuch a tharpe capacitie of minde, that not one ly the promed fortune counterfait, but mas halfe of that opinion, that the berfelte was onely current . This young Gallant of more wit then wealth, and yet of more wealth then wifebour, fixing himselfe inferiour to none in pleasanthronceits, thought bimselfe superiour to all in bonest conditions, insomuch that be thought himselfe so apt to all things, that bee gave himselfe almost to nothing, but practifing of those things commonly which are incident to thefe tharpe wits, fire phases, fmooth quips, merry faunts, pfing teffing without meane, and abufing mirth without measure. As therfore the Sweetell Role hath his prickle, the finest Welnet his bracke, the finest floure his branto the tharpest wit bath his wanton will, and the boliest beade bis wicked way. And frue it is, that fome men write, and molt men beleeve, that in all verfed thapes, a blemith bungeth ras ther a liking enery way to the eyes, then loathing any way to the minde. Venus had her mole in her cheke, which made her moze amiable: Helen ber scarre in ber chins which Paris cale led Cos Amaris, the Whetsians of lone: Austippus his wart, Licurguesis went Solikewife in the disposition of the minde, cither corer

editier berthe is over thadowed with fome vice, or vice over, call with fome vertue. Alexander paliant in warre, vet ginen to wine. Tully eloquent in his glofes, yet baine-glozious. Salomon wife, vet too too wanten. David holy, but yet an homis cide. Bone moze wittie then Euphues, pet at the first none more wicken. The freiheft cullours foonell fabe, the keenell Rasos foonell turneth his code, the finell cloth is foonell eaten with the Dothes, and the Cambricke Coner Cained then the courfe Canuas: which appeared well in this Euphues. whose wit being like Ware, apt to receive any impression, and bear ring the bead in his owne hande, either to ble the reine of the fpurre, bilbaming counfaile, leading his Country, loathing his old acquaintance, thought eyther by wit to obtaine fome Conquelt, 02 by thame to abide fome conflict : who preferring fancie befoze friends, and his prefent humor before honor to come, lapbe reafon in water being too falt for his talle, and followed imbaideles affection most pleasant for his toth.

wealthy then wife, and are more bestrous to have their children wealthy then wife, and are more bestrous to have them maintaine the name then the nature of a Gentleman: when they put golde into the hands of youth, where they thould put a rod under their girdle, when in stad of aims they make them pass grace, and leave them rich executors of goods, and poore executors of goddinesse; then it is no mermaile, that the some beering left rich by his fathers will, become reteblesse in his owne will. But it hath been an old said saw, and not of less trueth then antiquitie, that wit is the bester if it be the dever bought, as in the sequell of this bissoie shall most manifestic appears.

It happened this young impe to arrive at Naples. (a place of more pleasure then profit, and yet of more profit then pittie) the verie walls and thindstones subereof, the web it rather to be the Labornacle of Venus, then the Lemple of Vella. There was all things necessarie and in reactinesse, that might either allowe the minue to lust, by entice the part to follie: a Court more meet for an Atheis then for one of Atheis : for Ouid then to Aristotle: say a gracelesse Loner, then for a goaly liner: more

more fitter for Paris then Hector, and meeter for Flora then Diana. Heere my youth (whether for weariness he could not, or for wantonness he would not goe anie farther) betermined to make his abode: whereby it is enidently seene, that the slatest fish, swalloweth the delicatest baite, that the highest soaring Hawke trainesh to the lune, and that the wittiest draine is enueigled with the suddaine view of alluring danities. Heere he wanted no companions, which courted him continually with sundry kindes of denices, whereby they might soake his purse to reape commoditie, or sooth his person to winne credite: for hee

had guetes and companions of all forte

There frequented to his lobating, as wel the Spider to fuck porlon of his fine wit, as the Be to gather Bonnie : as wel the Done as the Done : the fore as the Lambe ! as well Damocles to betray him, as Damon to be true to bim. Wet he behaued himselfe fo wardie, that he fingled his game wifely. Dee could eafily differne Apollos mulick from Pan bis uppe, and Venus beautie from Iunoes brauerie, and the faith of Lalyus from the flatterie of Aristippus: he welcommed all, be trufted none, be was enerry, but pet fo warie, that neither the flatterer could take aduantage to entrap him in his talke, nos the wifelt ante affuraunce of his frienothip: Toho beeing bemaimord of one what Countryman hee was, he aunswered, what Countryman am I not ? If I be in Creet, I can lye, if in Greece, I can Myft : if in Iraly, I can court it : If thou afte whole Sonne I am, I afke thee whole Sonne Jam not. I can caroule with Alexander, abstaine with Romulus, eate with the Cpicure, fast with the Stoike, fleepe with Endimion, watch with Chrifippus, bling thefe fveches and other line.

An olde Gentleman in Naples, seeing his pregnant wif, his eloquent tongue some what taunting, yet with delight: his mirth without measure, yet not without wit: his sayings vainglorious, yet pithic: begaune to be waile his nurture, and so muse at his nature: being incensed against the one as most pernitious, and instance with the other as most pretious: so he well knew, that so rare a wit would in time, either breede

15 2

an intellerable trouble, or bring an incomparable treasure to the Common weals: at the one he greatly pittied, at the other her retorced.

Daning therefore gotten opportunitie to communicate with him his minde, with watrie eyes, as one lamonting his wantonnesse, and finding face, as one louing his wittinesse, en-

countred him on this manner.

Poung Gentleman, although my acquaintance be fmall to intreate you, and my authoritie lefte to commaund you, yet my good will in giving you good counfaile, thould induce you to beleene mee: and my boarie baires (Embaffabogs of experience) enforce you to follow me : for by bowe much the more 3 am a Aranger to you, by to much the more you are beholding to mee: bauing therefore good opportunitie to biter my minbe, I mean to be importunate with you to follows my meaning. As thy birth both theme the erveeffe and lively Image of gentle blood, for by beinging by feemeth to me to be a great blot to the linage of to noble a brute : to that I am enforced to thinke, that eyther thou dibbell want one to give thee good infirmations, or that the Warents made thee a wanton with too much cockening: eye ther they were to foolish in bling no discipline, or thou to for ward in rejecting their doctrines either they willing to have the iole, as thou wilfull to be ill imployed. Dio they not remember that which no man ought to forget, that the tender youth of a shylde in like the tempering of newe Whare, ant to receive anie forme? De that will carry a Bull with Milo, muft ble to cars rie bim a Calfe alfo: bee that coneteth to have a ftraight tree, mult not bow bim being a twig.

The Potter fathioneth his clay when it is foff, and the Sparrow is taught to come when he is young: As therefoze the you beeing hote, receiveth any fozme with the Aroke of the Hammer, and keepeth it beeing cold foz ever, so the tender witte of a chylde, if with diligence if bee instructed in youth, will with industrie de those qualities in age. They might also have taken example of the wise Hubandman, who in the fattest and most fertill ground, soweth Demne before Wheate, a graine

that

that depeth op the superfluous mousture, and maketh the sople more apt so. Come: or of good Bardeners, who in their curious knots mire Nope with Time, as anders the one to the other, the one beeing depethen moust: or of cuming Painters, who so, they whitest works cast the blackes ground, to

make the pidure moze amiable.

If therefore thy father had beene as wife a Bufbandman as bee was a fortunate Dufband, or the Wother as good a buf wife, as thee was a happy Wife: if they had beene both as goo Carbeners to keepe they knot, as they were grafters to being forth fuch fruite: 02 as cunning Painters as they were happie Barents, no doubt they had folved Dempe befoze Witheate, that is, discipline before affection : they bad fet Hop with Time, that is, manners with wit, the one to appe the other : and to make thy berteritie moze, they had call a blacke grounde for they? white wooke : that is, they had mired threats with faire lokes. But things palt, are palt calling againe : it is too late to thutth the Stable booze when the Steed is Roine : the Troyans repens ted to late when they? Lowne was sported: yet the rememberaunce of their former follies, might breed in the a remorfe of confcience, and bee a remedy against further concupifcence. But now to the prefent time.

The Lacedemonians were wont to thewe they, children drunken men, and other wicked men, that by feeing they, filth, they might hunne the like fault, and another wich bices when they were at the like fate. The Persians to make they, youth abboars gluttony, would paint an Epicure, seeping with his meate in his mouth, and horriblic over-laten with Mine, that by the viewe of such monstrous sights, they might eschue the meanes of the like excesse. The Parthians to cause they, youth to loathe the alluring traynes of Momens wiles and beceifful inticements, had most curiously carned in their houses a young man blinde, besides whom was adiouned a Moman so erquisite, that in some mens sudgement, Pigmalions Image was not halfe so excellent, having one hande in his pocket, as noting her thest, and holding a knife in the other hand to cut his

throat. If the fight of fuch batie thapes caused a loathing of the like finnes, then my good Euphues, confider they blight, and bemare of thing ofone perrill. Thou art here in Naples a young foiourner, 3 an olo Senioz: thou a ftranger, 3 a Cittisen : thou fecure, boubting no milbap, I forespfull preading the mif-for tune . Dere mailt thou fee that which I ligh to fe: Dunken fottes wallowing in enery comer, in enery Chamber, yea, in enero Channell. Dere mavit thou behold that which I cannot without blufbing behold, noz without blubbering ofter: those whose bellies be they Cobs, who offer they goods a facrifice to they auttes : Totho flepe with meate in their mouthes, with finne in their barts, and with thame in their boufes. Deere, yea, here Euphues mailt thou la, not the carned bifard of a lewb Moman but the incarnate biface of a lafcinious wanton : not the thatow of love, but the fubiliance of laft. We bart melteth in drops of blood, to fer an Darlot with the one band rob fo mas my Coffers, and with the other to rippe to many Copfes. Thou art here amioff the pokes, betweene Scylla and Carybdis, ready if thon thunne Syrees, to finck into Semphlegades . Let the Laeedemonian, the Perfian, the Parthian, yea, the Meapolitan, cause the rather to beteff fer b billanie at the fight and biel of they banitie. Is it not farre better to abborre limnes by the remembrance of others faultes, then by repentance of thone owne follies ? Is not be accounted most wife, who other mens barnes bo make most marie ?

But thou wilt happily say, that although there bee manie things in Naples to bee justly condemned, yet are there some things of necessity to be commended: and as thy wil both leane to the one, so thy wit would also embrace the other. Alas Eupliues, by how much the more I save the high climbing of thy rapacitie, by so much the more I feare thy fall. The sine Thristall is somer crayed then the hard Parble: the granest Bach burneth faster then the dryest Dake: the fairest sike is somest soyled: and the sweets Ame turneth to the Gurpest Ainegar. The Bestlence doth most rifest infeathe clarest complexon, and the Caterpiller cleaueth but the ripest fruite: the most delicate

ĥè

no ig

110

120

in

o£

ſè

e

2,

0

t

ú

belicate wit is allured with small enticement buto bice, and most subject to getto buto banity. If therefore than do but harken to the Syrens thou wilt be enamoured; if thou haunt their boules and places, thou shall be enchanned. One drop of porton infecteth the whole tunne of Waine; one leafe of Coloquinicidantarreth and spoyleth the whole potte of pottage; one you make defaceth the whole parce of Lawre.

Diftend into thine owne conscience, and consider with the selfe the great difference between staring and starks blind, wit and wisedom, love and lust be merry, but with modestie; be sober, but not too sullen; be baliant, but not too bentrous. Let the attent be come, but not colle; the det wood imposets, to pass the time in honest recreation. Distruct no man without cause, neyther be thou credulous without proofs; be not light to follow energy mans opinion, not obtinate to stands in thine gives conceit. Serve God, love God, seare God, and God will so bless there, as either the hart can wish, or the friends desire; and so I am my counsel, befreching these to begin to follow it. They old Gene theman having sinished his discourse, Euphues began to shape him an aunssuere in these sort.

Father and friend, (your age the weeth the one, your honefly the other) I am neyther so inspicious to militrust your good will, not so fottish to missive your good counsaile, as I am therefore to thanke you for the sirst, so it stands mis byon to thinke better of the latter: I meane not to caull with you as one lowing Popisitrie, neyther to controle you, as one having superioritie, the one would bring my talke into the suspicion of france, the other consince mer of folly. Altherens you argue I knows not byon what probabilities, but sure I am upon no prose, that my bringing by should be a blemish to my birth, I aunswere and swere to that, you were not therein a little over that, either you gave too much credite to the report of others, or too much liberty to your owne indigement: you consints my Parents of pecusifuncts in making me a wanton, and miss of lespones in rejeting correction. But so many men, so many mindes, that may seme

in your executions, topich in anothers the may bee gracious. Auflippus a philosopher, yet who more courtlie? Diogeness aphilosopher, yet who more carterlie? Alho more popular then Placo, retayning alwaies gwo companie? Alho more enclous then Tymon venounting all humaine societie? Alho so seness as the Societie, which like flocks are more with no melodie? Alho so seure as the Epicores, which wallowed in all kinds of licencloudies?

Doughall men be made of one mettell, yet they be not all call in one molde: there is framed of the felfc-fame clay afwell the Tile to keepe out mater, as the Bot to containe liquo; the Somme both harben the byst and melt the Ware, fire maketh the gold to thine, and the Krain to Comother . Bertimes both res freth the Done, and kill the Bestle, and the nature of the man, disposeth that consent of the manners. Bow, whereas you fee med to lone my nature and loath my nurture, you be wany your otone weakenes, in thinking that nature may any toates be attered by concation; and as you have enfamples to confirme your pretence, to have I mott enibent and infaltible arguments: to ferue for my purpofe. It is naturall for the Wine to breat. the more you facke by Art to alter it, the more in the ende you may migment it. Atis propper for the Balmestree to mount, the beamer you load it, the higher it foronteth . Though proit be made foft with fire, it returneth to his barones: though the Familion be reclaimed to the fift, thee retireth to ber baugarte melle : the whelpe of a Waltiffe will neuer be taught to retrine the Bartribge : education can bane no their . where the ercels: tencie of Pature both beare fway. The fillie Poule will by no maner of meanes be tamed : the fubtile fore may well be bear ten, but never broken from frealing of his pray. If you pound Spyces, they will fmell the fingeter : feafon the Wioss never to well, the Wine thall talke of the Calke; plant and translate the Crabbestree, where, and whenfoeuer it please you, and it will never beare fweet Apple boileffe you graft it by Art tobich; nothing toucheth Bature. Infinite and innumerable were the examples I could alleadge and beclare to confirme the force of Pature.

pature, and conflict their your vaine and false toggeries, were not the repetition of them needlesse, having spewed sufficient, or bootlesse, seeing those alleadged will not persuade you. And can you be so unnaturall, whom Dame Pature hath nourished and brought up so many years, to repine as it were a gainst Pature.

The limititude you rehearled of the Mare, argueth your waving and melting braine, and your example of the hote and hard youn, theweth in you but colde and weake disposition. Do you not know that which all men do affirme and know, that blacke will take no other colour? That the stone Abelian being once made hote, will never after become colde? That fire cannot be source downeward? That Pature will have course after kinde? That every thing will dispose it selfe according to Pature? Can the Cthiopian change or after his skinne? or the Leopard his hiewe? Is it possible to gather Grapes of thornes, or Aigges of Thisses, or cause any thing to Arive against Pature?

But why goe I about to prayle Pature, the which as yet was never any Impe to wicked and barbarous, any Turke to vile and brutish, any beaft to dull and sencelesse, that could, or would, or durit dispraise, or contemme? Doth not sicero conclude and allow, that if we follow and obey Pature, we shall never erre? Doath not Aristocle alleadge and consirme, that Pature frameth or maketh nothing in anie poynt rude, daine,

02 bnperfed.

n

è

2

c

Pature was had in such estimation and admiration among the Beathen people, that the was reputed so, the onely Godbeste in Beauen. If Pature then have largelie and bountistablic indued mee with her gysts, why deeme you me so intoward and gracelesse? If the have dealt hardly with me, why ertall you so much my birth? If Pature beare no sway, why die you this adulation? If Pature worke the essen, what booteth anic education? Is Pature be of strength or sorce, what anaileth diripline or nurture? If of none, what helpeth Pature? But let these sayings passe, as knowne enivently, and graunted to be

#### Euphires.

frue, which none can a may benie, unlette he be falle, a; that

he bee an enemie to bumanitie.

As touching my relidence and abyding heere in Naples, my poutble affections, my sports and pleasures, my pastimes, my common dalliance, my delights, my resort a companie which baily ble to biste me, although to you they breed more softrows and care, then solace and comfort, because of your crabbed age, yet to me they bring more comfort and toy, the care and grafe, more bliss then bale, more happinesse then heaminesse, because of my youthfull gentlenesse. Eyther you would have all men olde, as you are, or ever knews young dayes: eyther in your youth, you were a berie victous and brigodie minded man, or noise beeing aged, berie superstitious, and deucate abour measure.

But you no difference between the young flourishing Bay Tre, and the old withered Beech ? Do kinde of diffinction betwirt the waring and the wayning of the Moone, and between the riling and letting of the Sunne ? Do you measure the bote affaults of youth, by the coloe fkirmifbes of age ? whole yeres are fubied to more infirmities then our youth. Wie merry, you mellanchollie: we scalous in affections, you realous in all your boings : you teatie for no caufe, toe hally for no quarrell : you carefull, we careleffe: we bold you fearefull: we in all points contrarie to you, and you in all points bulike bs. Seeing ther, fore wee be repugnant each to the other in nature, would you have be alike in qualities ? Wighlb you have one potion mini Ared to the burning Feauer, and to the colde Ballie & Dne plas Aer to an olde iffue, and a fresh wounde ? Dne falue for all fores ? One fauce for all meates ? Do, no, Eubulus, but will pelo to moze, then eyther I am bound to graunt, oz thou able to vamue.

Suppose that which I will never beleue, that Naples is a cankered Stoze-house of all Arife, a common Stewes for all Arumpets, the finck of Chame, and the very Purse of all finne: Hall it therefore follow of necessity, that all that are woodd of

lous.

tone, should be webded to lust? Will you conclude us it were Exconsequent; that whosever arrived here; that be invited to folly, and being inticed, of some shall be entangled; print, it is the disposition of the thought that altereth the nature of the thing.

The Dunne thineth oppon the danghill, and is not corrupted, the Diamond leeth in the fire and is not continued. The Christall toucheth the Load, and is not populated: The Birds Trochiles lineth in the mouth of the Crocodile, and is not spouled: a perfect wit is never be witched with lemonette, negther

entifed with lafcinionfnette.

As it not common, that the Bolme Tre fpringeth amitot the Beech ? That the Juie fureabeth bupon the hard fromes ? That the foft feathered Bedbe breaketh the bard Blabe ! If experience have not taught you thes, por hane lined long and learned little : or if your moilt braine have forgotten the fame, you have learned much and profited nothing. But it may be that you measure my affections by your ofone faucies, a knowing your felfe syther to fimple to raple the fiene by pollicit, of too meake to refift the affault by moineffe, you become me of as little init as your felfe, or of leffe force : eyther of friell capacis tie, or of no courage. In my judgement Enbulus, you fhall as foone catch a Bare with a Haber, as you fall perfmade youth with your aged and over morne eloquence, to fuch ferientie of lyfe, which as pet there was never Stoike in pretents lo frid, neyther any in life to precife , but would rather altoweit in words, then follow it in works, rather talke of it then tryit: Regther were you fuch a paint in your youth that abantoning all pleatures, all paffimes and belights, you would'those ras ther to facrifice the first fruites of your life to vaine bolines, then to pouthly affections. But as to the flourack quatteo with pains ties, all belicats feeme queafic, and as he that futfetteth with Willine, bleth afterward to altay with water: fo thefe old had bles, having over charged they gorges with fancis, action tail honeff recreation meere folly; and having taken a furfet of bes light, feeme nowe to favour it with befright, I mad one it will Secing

#### Euphites.

Soing therefore it is labour lost for met to persuate you, and wind bainly wasted for you to exhort me, here I found you, and here I leane you, having neither bought nor sold with you, but changed ware for ware. If you have taken little pleasure in my reply, I am sure that by your counsaile I have reaped lesse profit.

They that de fosseale Ponnie, burne Peinlock to smoake the Bestrom their Vives, and it may be, that to get some advantage of me, you have ver these smoakie arguments, thinking thereby to smoother me, with the conceit of strong imagination. But as the Camelion though he hath most guts, draweth least breath, or as the Cider tree, though her be fullest of pith, is sauthed from swength: so though your reasons seeme invarible to your selfestome. What substantiall, and your persuadions pithic in your owne conceit, yet being well were without some, they be shadowes without substance, and weake without some.

The Bird Taurus, hath a great voice, but a small bedie, the Thunder a great clay, but yet a little from: the emptie vestell giusth a greater sound then the full Barrell. I meane not to applie it, but loke into your selse, and you shall certain his Ande it; and thus I leave you seking it, but were it not that my companie state my comming, I woulde surelie help you to loke it, but I am called bence by my acquaintance.

Dephues having thus ended his talke departed, leaving this olde Gentleman in a great quandaries: who perceining that he was more enclared to wantonnesse then to wisedome, with a days stop, the teares trickling bottoms his cheekes, said: Desing thou wilt not buy counsaile at the first hand good becape, thou shalt buy repentance at the second hand at such differentiable rate, that thou wilt coule thy hard penny worth, and banne thy hard hart. Ah Euphues, little bott thou know, that if thy wealth was, the wise will give but small warmth, and if thy wist walls to wissuless, that thy wealth will be thee small good. If the one had been imploised to thrist, the other to learning, it had been hard to intended in the ther thou shoulest have

beine more fortunate by riches, or happy by wifevome, where ther more effectued in the Common weals for wealth to maintains warre, or for counfell to conclude peace. But alas, why do I pittle that in the which thou seemed to praise in the selfe? And so saying, he immediatlie went to his owne house, beautly

beingiling the young mans onhappines.

Deere you may behold Dentlemen, howe lewblie wit standeth in his stone light, how he demeth no pennie good Silver but his stone light, how he demeth no pennie good Silver but his stone, preferring the blossome before the fruit, the budge before the stone, the greene blade before fripe care of corne, his owne wit before all mens wisedome. Petither is that geation, seeing for the most part, it is propper to all those of sharpe capacitie, to esteeme of themselves as most proper: if one bee hard in conceiving, they pronounce him a bolte: if given to studie, they proclaime him a dunce: if merrie, a tester: if sade, a Saint: if full of words, a sof: if without speech, a Expher. If one argue with them boldie, then is bee impudent: if coldie, an innocent. If there be reasoning of Divinitie, they crie, Questippa nos, nihil ad nos: if of humanitie, Sentenrias loquitur carnifex.

Peereof commeth such great familiaritie betweene the ripest wits, when they shall see the disposition the one of the other, the sympathic of affections, and as it were but a paire of speeres to goe betweene their natures: one stattereth another by his owne follie, and layeth cuspions under the elbow of his fellow, when he seeth him take a nappe with fancie, and as their wit wreastesh them to vice, so it sozgeth them some feate excuse to

cloake their banitie.

To much fluvie both intoricate their braines, for (lay they) although Pron the more it is bled, the brighter it is, yet billuer with much wearing both walte to nothing: though the Cammock the more it is bolved the better it is, yet the Bowe the more it is bent and occupied, the weaker it wareth: though the Camonill the more it is troden, and pressed down, the more it spreadeth, yet the Aiolet the offiner it is handled and touched, the some it withereth and decateth. Besides this, a sine wit, a sharpe

tharps sence, a quicke boverstanding, is able to attaine to moze in a moment of a verie little space, then a bull a blockish head in amounth. The Sieth cutteth farre better and smoother then the Saw, the Mare yelbeth better and sooner to the Seale, then the Steele to the Campe, the smooth and plaine Bech is easier to be carued then the knottle Bore. For neither is

there anie thing but that bath his contraries.

Such is the Pature of those Pouises, that thinke to have learning without labour, and treasure without trauaile, either not boberffanding, or els not remembring, that the fineff edge is made with the blunt Wibetftone, and the faireft ielnel faftie oned with the bard bammer. I doe not about (Gentlemen) to inueigh against wit, for then I were witheste, but franklie to confeste mine owne little wit. I have quer thought fo funertie tiquilie of wit, that I feare I have committed Abolatry against wifebome : and if Bature had bealt fo benefitially with me. to have given me anie wit, I thould have beene readier in the bee fence of it to have made an Apologie, then any may to turne to Apollacie. But this I note, that for the moft part they frand fo on their Pantuffles, that they be fecure in perrils, obitinate in their otone opinions, impatient of labor, apt to conceine wrong, crebulous to believe the worft, readie to thake of their olde ace quaintance without caufe, and to conbemne them without colour : att which burnozs are by fo much the moze eafter to bee purged, by how much the leffe they bane festered the linewes. Mut turne we againe to Euphues.

Euphues having socurred by the space of two monthes in Naples, whether her were moved by the curtesse of a young Gentleman named Philaurus, or inforced by destinie: whether his pregnant wit, or the pleasant conceits wrought the greater liking of the minde of Eubulus, I know not for certaintie. But Euphues thewed such entire love towards him, that her seemed to make small account of any others, determining to enter into such an inviolable league of friendship with him, as neither time by pecermeals should impart, neither fancte other is solved, nor any suspicion infringe.

I have read (faith bee) and well I believe it, that a friend in in profectite a pleafure, a folace in aduertitie, in greefe a comfort, in ion amerrie companion, at all times another I, in all places the expresse image of mine owne person : insomuch, that a cannot tell whether the immortall Gods have beffomed anie mift boon moztall men, either moze able oz moze neceffary then friendlip. As there any thing in the worlde to bee reported ( 3 will not fay compared) to friendlip ? Can any treafure in this trantitozie pilgrimage, be of moze value then a friend ? In whole bosome thou mailt sleepe secure without feare, whom thou mailt make partner of all the fecrets without fulnition of fraude, and partaker of all the mil fortune without millruft of fleting, who will account the bale his bane, the milbane his miferie, the pricking of thy finger the pearcing of his bart. But tobether am I carried ? Haue I not also learned, that one thold eate a bufbell of falt with him lohom he meaneth to make his Friend: that tryall maketh truft : that there is falthood in friendlbip and what then ! Doth not the Cimpathie of maners make the conjunction of minds ? Is it not a by wood. Like will to like ! Pot fo common as comendable it is, to fe young Gentlemen choose them such friends, with whom they may seems being absent to be prefent : being a funder, to be conversant : beeing beat, to be aline. I will therefoze haue Philaurus tobe my phere, and by fo much the moze 3 make my felfe fire to baue Philaurus, by home much the moze & vielve in him the linely image of Euphues. Although there be none fo ignozant that both not know, neither any fo impudent, that will not confelle friendship to be the iswell of humaine ioy : yet whosever thall fee thes amitie grounded open a little affection, will foene contedure, that it will be diffolued byon a light occasion; as in the lequell of Euphues and Philaurus you shall some perceine, whose hate love quicklie became colde: for as the best Wine booth make the tharpest Minegar, so the bepett loue turneth to the deadlieft hate. To bo deferued the most blame in mine opinion is doubtfull, and to difficult, that I care not pre-Cume to grue berdite. For love beeing the cause for which sa many

miany mischieses have beine attempted. I am not yet perfore bed whether of them was most to be blamed, but certainly never

ther of them was blameleffe.

I appeale to your indgement Gentlemen, not that I thinke any of you of the like disposition, able to decide the question, but desing of deeper discretion then my selfe, are more sit to debate the quarrell. Though the discourse of their friendship and falling out be some what long, yet being some what strange, I hope the delightfulnesse of the one, will attenuate the tedious nesse of the other.

Euphues had continuall access to the place of Philaurus, and no little familiaritie with him, and finding him at connenient leviure, in these short tearmes following, unfolded his

minde to him.

Gentleman and friend, the tryall I have had of thy manners, cutteth off divers tearmes which to another I would have been in like manner. And fith a long discourse argueth folly, and delicate woods incurre the suspiction of flatterie, I am determined to be neither of them, knowing either of them to be determined to be neither of them, knowing either of them to be determined to be neither of them, knowing either of them to be determined to be neither of them, knowing either of them to be determined to be neither of them, knowing either of them to be determined to be neither of them, knowing either of them to be determined to be the force of friendship by the effects, I know ever find a manners being a Scholler, the which the qualities, as I finde in you able to satisfie my better, so I hope I shall sinde a hart in you willing to accomplish my request. Which if I may obtaine, assure your selfe that Damon to hys Pythias, Pylades to his Orestes, Tyrus to his Gysippus, Theseus to his Pyrothous, Scipio to his Lahus, was never sound more faithfull, then Euphues will be to Philautus.

Philaurus by how much the leffe he looked for this discourse, by so much the more he liked it, for he saw all qualities both of body and minde in Euphues, but o suborn he revised as follows.

eth.

Friend Euphues, (for for your talk warranteth me to tearme you) I dare neither ble a long processe, neither a louing speech, least unwittingly I should cause you to continue mee of those things.

things, inbich you have already condemned. And berilie T and boid to neefume byon your curtefie, fith your owne felfe have be Ced to little curiolitie : perfinading my felfe, that my thoat anne finere will worke as great an effect in you, as your few morbs min in mie. And fæing we refemble (as you fay) each other in qualities, it cannot be that the one thould differ from the other in curtefie : feeing the fincere affection of the minde cannot bee expressed by the mouth, and that no Art can bufolde the entire love of the bart. I am earneftly to befeech you not to measure the firmenelle of my faith, by the fewnelle of my wordes, but rather thinke, that the over-flowing waves of good will, leave no paffage for manie words. Triall thall prome truft: here is my hand, my hart, my lands and my life at the commaunde, ment. Thou mailt well perceive that Joio beleine thee, that to foone I did lone thee: and I hope then wilt the rather lone me, in that I Did belæne thie.

Cither Euphues and Philaurus frode in need of friendship, or were ordained to be friends, spon to thore to darning to make to fine a conclusion, might fewer in mine opinion, if it continued, miraculous: if thaken off, riviculous. But after many embracings and protestations one to another, they walkt to binner, where they wanted neither meate, neither masteke, neither anic other passime: and having banquetted, to digest their since confections, they baunced all that after moone: they bedo not onelie one boord, but one bedde, one booke, (if so be it they thought not one to manic.) Their strendship augmented enery bay, insomuch that the one could not restaine the companie of the other, one minute: all things went in common betweene

Philaucus being a Towne boane Childe, both for his ofwne countenaunce, and the great countenaunce which his Father had while he lived, crept into credite with Don Ferardo, one of the cheefe Governours of the Cittie, who although he had a courtlie crew of Gentlewomen socourning in his Pallace, yet

them, which all men accounted commendable.

his Daughter, heire to his whole revenewes, stained the beautie of them all; whose modest bathfulnesse, caused the other to

#### Euphties.

looke wanne for envie: phose Liltie chekes dued with a Herrmillion redde, made the rest blushe for shame. For as the since kubic stainest the colour of the rest that be in place, or as the brightnesse of the Sounce dimmeth the Spoone that thee cannot be discerned: so this gallant girle more faire then for tunate, and yet more fortunate then saithfull, eclipsed the beautic of them all, and changed their colours. Unto her had Philautus accesse, who wanne her by right of scue, and should have more her by right of Lawe, had not Euphues by strange destenie, broken the bands of marriage, and sorbidden the banes of matrimonie.

It happened that Don Ferardo had actation to goe to Veroice, about certaine of his owne affaires, leaning his daughter the onelie Steward of his boulhold, who spared not to feast her friend Philaurus, with all kindes of delights and delicates, referuing onely her honestie, as the chiefe stay of her honoz. Her Father hæinggone, shee sent for her friende to Supper, who camenat as he was accustomed solitarile alone, but accompanied with his friend Euphnes. The Gentlewoman, whether it were for nicenesse, or sor niggardnesse of curtesse, gave him such a cold welcome, that he repented that he was come.

Euphues though he knewe himfelfe worthie everie way to have a good countenannce, yet could bee not perceive her willing anie way to lende him a friendly looke. Bet leaft he should feeme to want ichtures, or to be dashed out of conceit with her coy countenaunce, he addressed him to a Gentlewoman called

Liuis, boto whom he bttered thefe fpeches.

Faire Lady, if it be the guise of lealy to welcome strangers with strangenesse, I must needes say the custome is strange, and the Country barbarous: if the manners of Ladies be to salute Gentlemen with councile, then Jam ensoaced to think the Momen voide of curtesse to vie such welcome, and the men past shame that will come. But heereafter, I will either bring a stoole on mine arme, so an unbidden guest, or a Mizard on my face, so a shamelesse Gossippe. There boon, Linia replied in this manner.

Sir, our Country is civill, and our Genflewomen are curteous, but in Naples it is counted a iell, at every word to fay, In faith you are welcome. As the was yet talking, Supper was lette on the boozd: then Philaurus spake thus but Lucilla. Pet Genflewomen, I was the bolder to bring my hadow with me (meaning Euphues) knowing that he should be the better welcome for my sake. Unto whom the Gentlewoman replyed: Sir, as I never when I saw you, thought that you came without your shadow, so note I cannot a little meruaile to see you so over-shotte, in bringing a newe shadow with you. Euphues, though he perceived her coy nip, seemed not to care for it, but taking her by the hand, said.

Faire Ladie, feeing the thade both so often thield your beautie fro the parching Sunne, I hope you will the better esteme of the thadow: and by so much the less it ought to be offensue, by how much the less it is able to offens you, and by so much the moze you ought to like it, by how much the moze you ofe to

lie in it.

Mell Bentleman, aunswered Lucilla, in arguing of the shadow, wee sozgoe the substance: pleaseth it you therefore to sitte downe to Supper. And so they all sate downe: but Euphues sedde of one dish, which was before him, the beautie of Lucilla.

Here Euphues at the first light was so kindled with desire, that almost he was like to burne to coales. Supper beeing ended, the order was in Naples, that the Gentlewomen would bestre to heare some discourse, either concerning some or learning. And although Philaurus was requested, yet hee posted it ouer to Euphues, whom he knew most sit for that purpose. Euphues being thus tyed to the stake by their importunate intreatie, began as followeth.

De that work may, is alwaies inforced to hold the Candle, the weakest must still to the wall, where none will, the deall himselfe must beare the Crosse. But were it not Gentlewomen, that your lusts standes so, law, I would be provide much leave, as to resigne my office to one of you, whose experience in

ID 2

#### Euphites.

Rose hash made you learned, and whole learning hath made you to lovelie; so, me to intreate of the one being a novice, or to discourse of the other being a trewant: I may wel make you wearie, but never the wifer, and give you occasion rather to laugh at my rashnesse, then to like of my reasons: yet I care the less to excuse my boldness to you, who were the cause of my blind-nesse. And sith I am at mine owne choise, either to talke of love or of learning, I had rather for this time be deemed an unthrist in rejecting profite, then a Stoicke in renouncing pleasure.

It hath beene a question often vispated, but never betermined, whether the qualities of the minde, or the composition of the man, cause women most to like, or whether beautie or wit move men most to love. Certes, by howe much the more the minde is to be preferred before the body, by so much the graces of the one are to be preferred before the gysts of the other, which if it be so, that the contemplation of the inward qualitie, ought to be respected more then the view of the inward beautie, then doubtlesse Momen eyther do or should love those best, whose bestue is best, not measuring the desormed man with the resormed minde.

The foule Toabe hath a fayze frone in his heade: the fine Colde is founde in the filthic earth : the fweete kirnell lyeth in the harde thell: Mertne is harboured in the hart of him that molt men efteeme milbave. Contraribile, if we refpet moze the outward thape then the inward babite, good God, into how many mischiefes do wee fall ? Into inhat blindnesse are wes ledde ! Do we not commonly fee, that in painted pots is his Den the deadlieft poyfon ? that in the greenelt graffe is the great tell Derpent ? In the clereft water the bglieft Monde ? Doth not experience teach be, that in the most curious Sepulcher, are inclosed rotten bones ? That the Conzes tre beareth a faire leafe, but no fruite . That the Chrich carrieth faire fcathers; but ranck fleth ! Bowe frantike are those Louers, which are carried away with the gay gliffering of the fine face : the beautie whereof is parched with the Sunnes blaze, and chapped with

with the Winters blatt: which is of so those continuance, that it faveth before one perceive it flourish: of so small profit, that it poploneth those that possesses it: of so little value with the wife, that they account it a delicate value with a deadle hanke: a sweete Panther with a denouring paunch, a sower poplon in a filter pot.

Deere I could enter into discourse of such fine Dames, as being in love with their owne lookes, make fuch course account of their passionate Louers : for commonly, if they bee a. borned with beautie, they be fraite laced, and made fo bigh in the insteppe, that they distaine them most that most befire the. It is a world to fee the boating of their Louers, and they? Dealing with them, the renealing of whose subtill traines woulde caufe met to thebbe teares, and you Bentlewomen, to Butte pour modelt eares. Pardon mee Bentlewomen, if I bnfold e nery wile, and thew enery wincle of womens dispositio. Two things bo they cause their servaunts to bowe butothem, secrecie and foueraintie: the one to conceale they inticing flights, by the other, to affure themselues of their onelie fernice. Againbut boe there : if I thould have waded anie farther, and founbed the bepth of their beceit, I thould either haue procured your displeasure, or incurred the suspition of fraude: either armed you to practife the like fubtiltie, or accused my felfe of periurie. But I meane not to offend your chaft mindes, with the rehears fall of their buchaft manners, whole eares & perceine to glow, and harts to be ground, at that which I have already bettered: not that amongst you there be anie such, but that in your fere there fould be anie fuch.

Let not Pentlewomen therefore make too much of they, painted theath, let them not be so curious in their owne conceits, or so currify to their locall Louers. When the blacks Trowes foote shall appeare in they, eye, or the black Pre tread on their foote, when their beautie shall be like the blassed Rose, their wealth wasted, their bodies worne, their faces wrincled, their singers croked, who will like of them in their age, who loved none in their youth? If you will be cherished when you

D 3

the olve, be curteous while you be young: if you looke for comfort in your hoarie haires, be not coy when you have your gold ben locks: if you would bee embraced in the wayning of your braverie, be not squeamish in the waring of your beautie: if you desire to be kept like the Rose when it hath tost his colour, smell sweet as the Rose doth in the bud: if you would bee taked for old Mine, be in the mouth a pleasant Grape: so shall you be cherished for your curtesse, comforted for your honestie, embraced for your amitie: so shall yee be preserved with the sweets

Mole, and bannken with the pleafant Wine.

Thus farre I am bold Gentlewomen, to countell those that be coy, that they we are not the web of their owne woe, no; spin the three of their owne woe, no; spin the three of their owne three when the three owne owerthwards neke. And sking we are even in the bowels of lone, it shal not be amisse to examine subsether man or woman be somest allured, subsether be most constant, the male or the scane. And in this pount I means not to be mine owne carver, least I should seeme either to picke a thanke with Hen, or a quarrell with Women. If therefore it might stand with your pleasure (Historical Lucilla) to give your censure, I would take the contrary: so fare I am, though your indgement be sound, yet affection will shadow it.

Lucilla, fæing this pretence, thought to take advantage of his large proffer, but o whom the faid. Gentleman, in mine opinion, Waomen are to be wonne with enerie winde, in whose fere, there is neither force to withfrand the assaults of love, neither constancie to remaine faithful. And because your discourse hath hetherto bredde delight, I am loth to hinder you in the sequell of your decises. Euphues perceiving himselse to be taken

napping, aunfwered as followeth.

spittres Lucilla, if you speake as you thinke, these Gentlewomen present have little cause to thanke you, if you cause mee to commend Momen, my tale will be accounted a meere trifle, and your words the plaine truth: yet knowing promise to be bebt, I will pay it with performance. And I would the Gentlemen here present, were as readie to credit my prose, as the

Bentle:

#### Euplines.

Bentlewomen are willing to heare their owne prayles: 0.3 as able to over-come, as Piltres Lucilla would be content to be querthrowne. How some the matter thall fall out, Jam of the surer side: for if my reasons bee weake, then is our sere trong: if sociale, then is your sudgment feeble: if I sind truth on my side, I hope I shall for my wages winne the good will of Women: if I want proofe, then Bentlewomen of necessitie you must predo to men. But to the matter.

Touching the yelding to lone, albeit their harts seeme tenser, yet they harden them like the stone of Sicilia, the which, the more it is beaten, the harder it is: for being framed as it were of the perfection of men, they be free from all such cogisations as may any way provoke them to uncleannesse, insomuch as they abhore the light love of youth, which is grounded upon lust, and discound upon every light occasion. When they see the sollie of men turns to surie, their delight to doating, their affection to frenzie, when they see them as it were pine in pleasure, and to wave pale through their owner possistency, they sutes, their service, their letters, their labours, their loves, their lines seeme to them so odious, that they harden their harts against such concupiscence, to the ende that they might convert them from rashnes, to reason: from such lewde disposition, to honest discretion.

Hereof it commeth that men accuse women of crueltie, because they themselves want civilitie: they account them full of wiles, in not yeelding to their wickednesse: faithlesse, so resting their silthines. But I had almost sozoot my selse, you shal pardon me Histoires Lucilla soz this time, if thus adjuptlie I sinish my discourse: it is neither soz want of good will, or lacked spoose, but that I sels in my selse such an alteration, that I can scarce otter one word: Ah Euphues. Euphues. The Genetlewomen were strooke into such aquandarie with this sodaine change, that they all changed colour. But Euphues taking Philautus by the hand, and giving the Gentlewomen thankes softhey patience and his repast, had them all farewell, and went immediatly to their Chamber. But Lucilla who now began to

frie in the flames of loue, all the companie being beparted to their lobatings, entred into these tearmes and contrarieties.

Ab weetched wench Lucilla, howart thou perplered ? Inhat a poubtfull fight book thou fiele betweene faith and fancie, home and feare, confcience and concupifcence ? D my Euphues, little Don't thou know the fodaine for row that I fullaine for the finet fake, whose wit bath bewitched me, whose rare qualities bath Deprined mee of mine olde qualitie, whole curteous behaniour without curiofitie, whose comile feature without fauit . whose filed (peech without fraude, bath wapped mee in this mil-fox tune. And canft then Lucilla be fo light of love in forfaking Philaucus to flie to Euphues ? Canft thou preferre a ffranger before thy Countriman, a farter befoze thy companion? With, Euphues perhaps both befire thy lone, but Philaurus bath beferned it. Taby, Euphues feature is worthy as good as 4, but Philaurus his fayth is worthy a better. I, but the latter loue is more feruent : 4. but the first ought to be most faithfull . 3, but Euphues bath greater perfection: 4, but Philautus bath Deper atfection. Ah fond wench, bout thou thinke Euphues will beeme the confrant to him , when thou half beene buconfrant to his friend ? Weenell thou that he wil have no mittrult of thy faithe fulnelle, when be bath bab triall of thy ficklenes ? Wall be have no boubt of thine honour, when thou thy felfe callest thine hos neltie in question? Des, ves, Lucila, well both be know that the Claffe ance crased, will with the leaft clappe bee cracked: that t'e cloth which fraineth with Wilke, will foone loofe his colour with Minegar, that the Cagles wing will walt the fear ther, as wel of the Whenir as of the Whelant : that the that bath ben faithleffe to one, will neuer be faithfull to any . But can Euphues conuince me of fleting, feing for his fake 3 brake my fivelity. Lan be conbeinne me of villoialtie, when be is the one lie cause of my billihing ? Way be intly conbemne mee of treas cherie, who hath his tellimonie as triall of my good wil ? Doth not he remember, that the broken bone once lette together, is fronger then suerit was ? That the greatest blot is taken of with the Bommice ? That though the Spider poplan the flie.

De

to

at

le

at

th

HE

fe

19

1

10

1

1-

1-

6

2

B

the cannot infect the Be? That although I have been light to Philautus, I may be louelie to Euphucs? It is not my defire, but his deferts that mourth my minde to his choice: neither the want of the like good will in Philautus, but the lack of the like good qualities that removeth my fancie from the one to the other.

For as the Bathat gathereth Pony out of the wede, when the especial the faire flower, flieth to the swetch: or as the kind Spaniell though he hunt after Birds, yet sociales them to retrine the Partridge: or as we commonly sede on Best hungerlie at the first, yet seing the Duaile more daintie, change our diet. So J, although I loue Philaurus for his good properties, yet seeing Euphues to excell him, I ought by nature to like him better. By so much the more therefore my change is to be excused, by how much the more my choice is excellent: and by so much the less I am to be condemned, by how much the more Euphues is to be commended. Is not the Diamond of more value then the Rubie, because he is of more vertue? Is not the Emerauld preferred before the Saphire so, his swanderfull propertie: Is not Euphues 11002e praise woorthy then Philautus, being more wittie?

But fie Lucilla, why bout thou flatter thy selfe in thine own folly? Canst thou faine Euphues thy friende, whom by thine owne words thou hast made thy foe? Diddest not then accuse Momen of inconstancie? Diddest not y account thy selfe easier to be won? Diddest not thou condemne them of weakenesse? What sounder argument can hee have against the then thine owne aunswere? What better proofe then thine owne speech? What greater tryall then thine owne talke? If thou hast belied women, he will image thee unkinde: if they have revealed the troth, he must needed thinke thee unconstant: if he perceive the to be wome with a Put, he will imagine that thou will be lost with an Apple: if he find the wanton before thou be woed, he will geste thou will be wanting when thou art wedded.

But suppose that Euphues loue thee, that Philaucus leave thee, will the Father (thinkest thou) give thee libertie to live after

after thine owne luft? Will be effeeme him worthy to inherite his postestions, whom he accounteth butwoathy to entry thy perfon ? Is it like that be will match thee in mariage with a Bran. ger, with a Grecian, with a meane man ? 3, but what know, eth my father whether be be wealthy, whether his reuennes be able to counteruaile my fathers lands, whether his birth be noble, yea, or no ? Can any one make boubt of his gentle blood that feeth bis gentle conditions ? Can his honour be called in question, whose honestie is so great? Is bee to bee thought thriftleffe, who in all qualities of the minde is peercleffe ? Po, no, the Tree is knowne by his fruite, the gold by the touch, the Sonne by his Sire. And as the foft Ware receineth whatfoes uer print be in the Seale, and theweth no other impreffien : fo the tender Babe being fealed with his fathers gifts, reprefenteth his image molt linely. But were I once certaine of Euphues his good will, I would not fo superfficiously account of my fathers ill will.

Time hath weaned mee from my Dothers teate, and age ribbe me from my fathers correction : when Chylozen are in they? (wathe cloutes, then are they subject to the whippe, and ought to be carefull of the rigour of their Barents. As for mee, feeing 3 am not febbe with their pappe, 3 am not to be lebbe by they perswalions. Let my Father ble what speches be lift, 3 will follow mine owne luft. Luft Lucilla, what failt thou? Po, no, mine olone loue I Chould haue faid, fog 3 am as farre frem luft, as I am from reason, and as neere to lone as I am to foltie, then flicke to thy betermination, and fhewe thy felfe what love can boe, what love bares bo, what love hath roone. Albe. it I can no way quench the coales of befire with foggetfuls nede, yet will I rake them by in the alhes of modeffie. Erces ing I bare not make knowne my loue, for maiornlie fhames falfnelle, I will biffemble it till time I have opostunitie. And I hope to to behave iny felfe, as Fuphues Mall thinke mee bis owne, and Philaurus perswade himselfe & am none but his. But I would to God Euphues would repaire bether, that the fight of him might mittigate some part of my martir bome.

She having thus discoursed with her selfe her some milerics, cast herselfe on the bed, and there let her lie, and returne we to Euphues, who was so caught in the ginne of follie, that he neither could comfort himselfe, nor durst aske counsell of his Friend, suspecting that which indeede was true, that Philaurus was corruall with him, and commate with Lucilla. Amiost therefore these his extremities, betweene hope and feare, he be tered these or the like speches.

That is he Euphues, that knowing the wit and fæing the folly, but will rather punish the lewonesse, then pitte the hearinesse? That there ever any so fickle, so some to be allured, ever any so faithlesse, to deceive his friend? ever any so folish, to bathe himselfe in his owne missortune? And true it is, that as the Seascrabbe swimmeth alwaics against the streame, so init alwaics striveth against wisedome: And as the Beis of ten-times hurt with his owne Honny, so is wit not sloome pla-

qued with his ofone conceit.

rite

era

ens

In.

es

rth

tle

ed ht

o, he

20

B

10

1-

of

e

D ye Tods, have ye ozdained for every malady a medicine, for every fore a falue, for every paine a plaitter: leaving onelie love remedileste? Did ye daine no man so mad to be entangled with desire, or thought yee them worthy to be tormented that were so missed? Have yee dealt more favourably with brute

beafts then with reasonable creatures.

The filthy Sowe when the is sicke eateth the Seascrab and is immediatly recured: The Doztoise having tasted the Tiper, sucketh Origanum and is quickly remied: the Beare ready to pine, licketh by the Ants and is recovered: the Dogge having surfetted, to procure his bomit, eateth grasse and sindeth remedie: the Part beeing pearced with the Dart, runneth out of hande to the hearbe Distanum, and is healed. And can men by no hearbe, by no Arte, by no way, procure a remedie for the impatient disease of loue? Ah well I perceive that love is not builke the Figge-tree, inhose fruite is sweet, but the roote is more ditter then the claws of a Bitter: or like the Apple in Persia, whose blossome sanoureth like Ponny, whose budde is more sowe then Ball.

15ut

But D impictie, D broade blasphemie against the heavens, while thou be so impudent Euphues, to accuse the Gods of iniquitie? Posond foole, no. Peither is is sorbidden by the Gods to love, by whose divine providence we are permitted to live: neither do not want remedies to recure our maladies, but reasson to be the meanes. But why goe I about to hinder he course of love, with the discourse of law? Hast thou not read Euphues, that he that soppeth the Aine, causeth it to spread fairer? that he that stoppeth the Areame, causeth it to swell higher? that he that casteth water in the sire at the Smithes sorge, maketh it to same siercer? Even so her that seketh by counsaile to medicate his over-lathing affections, encreaseth his owner miles, tune.

Ah my Lucilla, would thou wert eyther leffe fapze, or 7 more fortunate, either I wifer, or thou milber : either I wonto I were out of this mad moode, or els I would we were both of one minde. But how thould thee be perswaded of my loyaltie, that yet had never one simple proofe of my love ? Will thee not rather imagine me to be intangled with her beautie, then with ber bertne? That my fancie being fo lewdie chained at the first, wil be lightly chained at the last : that nothing violent can be permanent. Des, pes, the mult needes coniedure fo, als though it be nothing to: for by howe much the more my affecti on commeth on the fuddaine, by to much the leffe will the think it certaine. The ratling Thunderbolt bath but his clappe, the lightning but his flath, and as they both come in a moment, fo bothey both end in a minute. 3, but Euphues, hath thee net heard also that the day Touchwood is kindled with Line : that the greatest Buibzumpe groweth in one night ? Ethat the fire quickly burneth the Flare ? That lone entity entereth into the hape without relitance, and is harboured there without repentance.

If therefore the Gods have endued her with as much bountie as beautie, if the hath no leffe wit then the hath comlinette: certes the will neither conceine finefferly of my fuddaine lute, neither be coy to receive me into her fervice, neither suspect mis

of lightnes in vælding to lightly, neither reied me bifdainfullie for louing fo hallily ? Sohall I not then hasard my life to obtaine my loue ? and beceine Philautus to receine Lucilla ? Des Euphues, where loue beareth fway, friendfhip can haue no fhew: As Philautus brought me for his thatow the last Supper, to will ? ble him for my thatowe till I gaine his Saint. And cant thou weetch be falle to him that is faithfull to thee ? Shall his curtelie be cause of thy crueltie? Will thou biolate the league of fayth, to inherite the land of folly ? Shall affection be of moze force then friendithip, loue then law, luft then loialty ? Innew. eff thou not, that he that loofeth his honeflie, bath nothing els

to loose.

Tulh the cause is light, where reason taketh place: to lone and to line well is not graunted to lupiter, Witho fo is blinded with the Caule of beautie, Difcerneth no colour of honestie? Dio not Giges cut Candaules a coat by his owne measure ? Dio not Paris, though he were a welcome guet to Menelaus, ferne his Hoft a flippery prante ? If Philautus had loued Lucilla, he would never have fuffered Euphues to have fane ber. Is it not the pray that entifeth the Thefe to rifle : Is it not the pleafant baite that caufeth the fletiff fill to bite ? Is it not a by worde amongit bs, that Gold maketh an honell man an ill man ? Dio Philautus account Euphues fo fimple to Decipher beantie, 02 fo fuperstitious, not to defire it ? Did he beine bim a Saint in reteding fancie, 02 a fotte in not bifcerning & Thought he him a Stoike that hee wonloe not be mooned, or a ficche that hee could not ?

Well, well, fieing the wounde that bleedeth inwardle, is molt dangerous, that the fire kept close, burneth molt furious, that the Duen dampned up baketh foonest, that foges having no bent, fetter fecretly, it is high time to unfolde my feeret loue to my fecret friend. Let Philaurus behaue himfelfe neuer fo eraf. tily, he thall know that it must be a wille Woule that that beed in the Cats care : and because I resemble him in wit, I meane a little to diffemble with him in wiles. But D my Lucilla, if thy bart be made of that stone which may be modified onelie

with blood, would I had Apped of the River in Caria, which turneth those that brinke of it to fienes. Ifthine eares bee and nointed with the Dple of Syria, that bereaueth hearing, fronto mine eyes had beene rubbed with the firrop of the Cepar tree. which taketh away fight . If Lucilla bee fo vigue to bifbaine poore Euphues, would Euphues were to happy to beny Lucilla. or if Lucilla be fo mortified to line without lone, would Euphyes were fo fortunate to line in hate. T, but my coloe welcome fozetelleth my colbe fute. 3, but her paine glaunces fignifie some good fortune. fie fond foole Euphues, why goest thou as bout to alleadge those things to cut off thy hope, which the perbaps would never have found, or to confort the felfe with those reasons which the never meaneth to propose. Tuth, it were no love if it were certaine, and a final conquest it is to over theow

those that never relifteth.

In battailes there ought to be a boubtfull fight, and a befper rate end, in pleading, a bifficult enfrance, and a Defuled Determination : in lone, a life without hope, & a beath without feare. Fire commeth out of the hardelt flint with the Steele: Dyle out of the dayest Beat by the fire, loue out of the stoniest hart by fagth, by trutt, by time. Was Tarquinius bled his lone with co tours of countenaunce, Lucrecia would exther have with fome vitty aunswered his diffre, or with some persivation have staicd ber beath. It was the heate of his luft that made her hafte to end ber life, wherefoze Loue in either refpect is not to be conbeimed, but he of rathnes, to attempt a Lady furioully, and the of rigour, to punish his folly in her ofene fleth: A fact ( in mine opinion) moze worthy the name of crueltie then challitie, and fitter foz a Monfter in the Defarts, the a Matron of Rome. Penelope no leffe conffant then the, pet moze wife, would be wear rie to betweate that in the night, the foun in the day, if Vliffes had not come home the Coner. There is no woman Euphues but the will pelo in time, be not then diffraied; either with high lokes of fromarb words.

Euphues bauing thus talked with himfelfe, Philaurus ene tred the Chamber, and finding him to worne and walted with continuall

h

lo

e, 1e

2, 1-

31

ie

as

r, Ce

10

m

20

re

e. le

g

oj 1e

to

15

12

31

10

10

cs

cs

b

continuall mourning, neyther toging in his meate, not retop-

Friende and fellowe, as Jam not ignozant of the prefent meakenes, fo am not printe to the caufe : and although a fue fred many thinges, yet can Jaffure my felfe of no one thing. Therefore my good Euphues, for these boubts and butters of mine, eyther remoue the cause, or reneale it. Thou haft he therto found me a cheerefull companion in my mirth, and noin thalt thou finde me as carefull with thee in thy moane. If altoaether thou maift not be cured, yet maift thou be comforted. If there be any thing that eyther by my friends may be procured, or by my felfe attained, that may eyther heale the in part, or helpe the in all, I protest to thee by the name of a friend, that it that rather be gotten with the loffe of my body, then loft by gettinda kingdome. Thou halt tryed me, therefoze truft me: thou halt trufted me in many things, therefore tryme in thes one thing. I neuer pet failed, and nowe I will not faint. Be bolo to fpeake and blufh not: thy fore is not fo angry but I can falue it, thy wound not so deepe but I can fearch it : thy ariefs not fo great but I can eafe it. Afit beripe, it thall be launced, if it be broken, it thall be fainted : be it never to befrerate it thall be cured. Rife therefoze Euphues, and take hartat graffe, youns ger thou halt never be : plucke by thy Comacke, if lone have Aunge the it hall not fifte the. Though then be enamoured of fome Laby, thou Galt not be inchaunted. They that begin to pine of a confumption, without belay preferue themselves boon Culliffes: he that feeleth his fromack inflamed with meate, coleth it eftfoones with Conferues : Delayes baco Danger, nothing fo perilous as procraftination. Euphues hearing this comfort and friendly countaile, diffembled his forrowing hart with a fmiling face, and aunfwered him as followeth. The the same

True it is Philancus, that he which toucheth the Pettle tens berly, is somek stung, that the Flie which plaieth in the sire is singed in the same, that he that dallieth with women, is drawn to his woe. And as the Adamant draweth the heavy you, a the Harp the sixt Dolphin, so beauty allureth the chast minde to

love, and the wifelf wit to luft. The erample whereof, I would it were no leffe profitable, then the experience to me is like to be perilous. The Time watered with wine, is fone withered : the blostome in the fattest ground is quickly blasted, the Goats the fatter the is, the leffe fertile the is : pea, man the moze wiffy he is, the leffe happy be is . So it is Philaucus, (for why flould 7 conceale it from the of whom I am to take counfaile) that fince my laft and first being with the at the boufe of Ferardo, Thang. felt fuch a furious battaile in my boby, as if it be not freedily repreffed by policy, it will carry my mind (the graund Captaine in this fight) into endlette captivity. Ab Livia, Livia, thy courts ly grace without coincile, thy blasing beauty without blemift. thy curteous Demeanour without curiofity, thy fleat freech fas noured with wit, the couly mirth fempered with modelite the chaft lokes, pet louely, the foare taunts, vet pleafant : haue at uen me fuch a check, that fure a am at the next viel of the bers tues, I hall take thee mate, and taking it not of a palvne, but of a Prince, the loffe is to be accounted the leffe. And though they be commonly in great choller that receine the mate, pet would I willingly take every minute ten mates, to enioy Livia for my loning mate. Doubtleffe,if euer fhe berfelfe hane ben feoztched with the flame of befire, the wil be ready to quench o coals with curtelle in another, if euer the hane beene attached of leue, the will refene him that is beenched in befire : if quer fpe haue been taken with the Featter of fancit, thee will helpe his Ague, who by a quotidian fitte is connerted to phentie: neither can there be onder to delicate a hiew lodged deceit, neither in to beautiful a molo, a malicious mine. True it is, that the disposition of the mind foloweth the composition of the boor: how then can the be in mind any way imperfed lubo in body is perfect every way. 3 know my fucceste will be goo, but I know not how to have ace ceffe to my Coodeffe, neither bo Twant courage to discouer my love to my friend, but some colour to cloake my comming to the boufe of Ferardo: for if they be in Naples as tealous as they be in the other parts of lealy, then it behoueth me to walk circum. fpedly, and to forge some cause for my often comming. 31

# **Euphues**I

Af therefore Philautus, thou cand let but this feather to mine arrowe, thou halt ferme that to nere, that thou wilt account me for a cunning Archer And berily, if g hab not loued the well, I would have fivallowed mine owne forrow in filence. knowing that in love nothing is fo bangerous, as to participate the meanes thereof to another; and that two may keepe counfaile if the one be away . Tam therefoze infozced perfozce, to challenge that curteffeat thy hands, which earft thou bioff 120. mife with the bart : the performance whereof, thall bind me to Philautus, and proue the faithful to Euphues Dow if the cunming be aunswerable to my good will, practice some pleasant conceit byon the page patient, one beam of Ounds Art, fome of Tibullis Dangs, one of Propertius Wits; which map cause me enther to purge my newe difeate; or recouer my hoped befire. But I feare me, where to trange a ficknelle is to be recured of to bufkilfull a Philition, that eyther thou wilt be to boise to practile, or my body to weake to purge. But feing a befperate Difeale is to be committed to a befperate Docto; 3 will follow thy countaile, and become thy cure, defiring the to be as wife in minitring the Philicke, as I have bene willing to put my lyfe into thy bands.

Philaurus thinking all to be gold that gliffered, and all to be Cofpell that Euphues offered, antwered his forged glofe, with

this friendly close.

È

2

2

3

2

.

6

1

11

ği

İ

1

1

2

0

2

D

h

2

1

0

2

ı

2

9

3

y

2

9

10

f

In that thou half made me pring to thy purpole, I will not conceale my practile: In that thou cranell my ayde, affure thy felfe, I will be the finger next thy thomb: in so much as thou that never repent the of the one or the other: for persuade thy selfe, that thou shalt finde Philaurus during lyse, readie to comfort the in thy missorumes, and succour the in thy necessitie. Concerning Livia, though she be faire, yet is she not so miable as my Lucilla, whose Servant I have been the tearme of three yeares; but least comparisons shold seme odious, chees the where both the parts be without comparison, I will omit that, and seing that we had both rather be talking with them, that tatling of them, we will immediatly go to them. And truly

f.

Euphues, Jam not a little glad, that I hall ham the not only a comfort in my life, but alle a companion in my loue : as then half beene wife in the choyle, to I hope then will be fortunate in thy chaunce. Livia is a wench of moze wit than beauty, Lucilla of more beauty then wit, both of more honeffy, than honor, and yet both of fuch honour, as in all Naples there is not one in birth to be compared with any of them : howe much therefore have we to reloyce in our choyle. Touching our accesse, be thou fecure, I Mall flap Ferardo in the month with fome conceif, and fill his old head to full of new fables, that thou thalt rather he earnefly intreated to repaire to bis bonfe, than euill intreates to leave it . As olde men are bery fulpitious to miffruft enery thing, fo are they bery credulous to believe any thing, the blind man both eate many a fire : yea, but faybe Euphues take bebe my Philautus that thou thy felfe fwollow not a Gubaen, which word Philaurus Did not marke, bntill he had almost Digested it. Went laybe Euphues, let be goe bewortly to the theine of our Saints, there to offer our Denotion : for my Bokes teach me, that fuch a wound muft be bealed where it was first burt, and for this difeate we will ble a common remedy, but yet comfore table. The eye that blinded the, thall make the fe, the Scotvion that Gung the. Chall beale the , a tharpe feze bath a thoat cure, let be goe : to the which Euphues confented willinglie. Impling to bimfelfe, to fee how he had brought Philaurus into a fooles Paradice.

Dere you may the Gentlemen, the fallehood in fellowship, the fraude in frienothippe, the paynted theath with the leaden Dayger, the faire words that make foles faine: but I will not trouble you with superfluous addition, but whom I feare me I have been fedious with the bare discourse of this Distory.

Philaurus & Euphues repaired to the house of Ferardo, where they found Hitres Lucilla and Liuia accompanied with other Bentlewomen, neyther beeing idle, not well employed, but playing at Cardes. But when Lucilla beheld Euphues, the would scarcelie contayne her selfe from embracing him, had not womanly shamefallnesse, and Philaurus his presence, kay

edher wifedome. Euphues on the other five was faller into fuch a traunce, that he had not the power either to fuctour himselfe, or falute the Gentlewomen. At the last Lucilla began as

one that beft might be bold, on this manner,

Gentleman, although your long absence gave me occasion to think you distiked your last entertainment, yet your comming at the last, hath cut off my former suspition, e by so much the more you are welcom, by how much the more you are wished for But you Gentleman, (taking Euphues by the hand) were the rather wished for, for that your discourse being lest unperfect, caused us all to long (as women are wont for things that like them) to have an end therof. That whom Philancus replied as followeth.

Wiftres Lucilla, though your curteffe made be nothing to boubt of our welcome, pet modeffie canted be to pinch curtefie. who thould first come : as for my friend, I thinke he was never wifhed for here le carnelly of any as of himfelfe, whether it might be to renue his talk, or recant his fayings, 3 cannot tell. Euphues taking the tale out of Philaurus mouth aunfweren. Stiffres Lucilla, to recant bereties were berefie, and forenue the prayles of womens flattery: the onely cause I withen my felfe here, was to give thanks for fo good entertainment, the which I could no wates beferue, and to beed a greater acquaintance if it might be to make amends. Lucilla inflamed with his prefence, fapo: Pay Ephues pou thall not escape to, for if my curtefic: as you fay, were the cause of your comming, let it also he the occasion of the ending of your former discourse other inite I thall think your profe naked, and you thall find my reward nothing. Euphues now as willing to obey, as the to command, addressed hymselfe to a farther conclusion, who faing all the Bentlewomen ready to give bim the hearing, proceded as followeth. I baue not yet forgotten that my laft talke with the fe Dentlewomen tended to their mayfes, and therefore the ende must the on the int profe : otherwife, I should fet bown Venus Thatowe without the linely fubstance.

As there is no one thing which can bee reckoned, eyther concerning love or loyaltye, where Momen one not excell

men, yet in fervencie aboue all others, they so far excede, that men are lykanto mervaile at them, than to imitate them, and readier to laugh at their vertues, than imitate them. Ho, as they be hard to be wome, without tryall of great faith: so are they hard to be lost, without great eaule of ficklenesse. It is long before the cold water seth, yet being once hot, it is long before it be cold water seth; yet being once hot, it is long before it be cold water seth; yet being once hot, it is long before it be cold water seth; yet being once hot, it is long before it be cold water seth; yet being once hot, it is long before it be cold water sether sethers.

ing once featoned, it never lofeth his faucur.

4. for mine owne part am brought into a Barabice, by the only imagination of womens bertues: and were & perfmaded. that all the binels in bell were women, I would never live benoutly to inherit heaven : 03 that they were all Saints in heas uen. I would tine moze trictly, for feare of hell . What could Adam hane bone in his Darabice before his fall, without a woman: De how could be have rifen againe after his fall, without a moman ? Artificers are wont in their latt workes to ercell themselves, yea, God wien he had made all things, at the last made man as mot perfect, thinking nothing could be framed more ercellent, pet after him he created a woman, the expresse Image of eternitie, the linely pidure of Bature, the only fele glaffe for man to beholde his infirmities, by comparing them with womens perfections. Are they not more gentle, more witto, more beautifull, than men ? Are not men fo bewitched with their qualities, that they become mad for love; and women fo wife, that they bo betell luft. was all alle

Jam entred into so large asseld, that I shall somer want time than profe, and so cloy you with varietie of Phrases, that I feare me I am like to insect women with price, which yet they have not, and men with spite, which yet I would not. Hor as the Porse if he knew his owne strength, were no waves to be brioles, of the unicomethis owne vertice, were never to be caught: so women, if they knew what excellency were in them, I feare me men should never win them to their wils, or weant

them from their mind.

Lucille began to finile, laying: In faith Euphues, I would have poultage there, for as the Sunine when the is at the high-

est, beginneth to goe bolone: so when the prayles of women are at the best, if you leave not, they will begin to faile. But Euphues (being rapt with the sight of his Saint) aunswered, no, no, Lucilla. But whilst he was yet speaking, Ferardo entered; whom they all butifully welcommen home, who rounding Philautus in the eare, bestred him to accompany him immediative without farther pausing, protessing that it should be as well for his preferment, as for his owner prosit. Philaurus consenting, Ferardo sayd unto his baughter.

Lucilla, the vegent affaires I have in hand, will caree suffer me to tarry with you one houre, yet my returne I hope will be so those, that my absence thall not be thy sorrow: in the meane season, I commit all things into thy custodie, wishing the to viethy accustomable curteste. And seing I must take Philaurus with me, I will be so bold to crave you Gentleman (his friend) to supply his rome, desiring you to take this hasty warning, so, a harty welcome, and so to spend this time of mine

ablence in honce mirth. And thus I leave you.

Philautus knewe well the cause of his sodaine departure, which was, to redame certaine Lands that were mozgaged in his fathers time, to the vie of ferardo, who on that condition, had befoze time promised him his daughter in marriage. But

returne we to Euphues.

Euphues was inspiled with such incredible toy at this strange event, that he had almost sounded, for seeing his corinall to be departed, and Ferardo to give him so friendly entertainment, doubted not in time to get the god will of Lucilla. Without sinding in place convenient without company, with a bold courage and comply tessure, he began to assay ber in this sort.

Dentlewoman, my acquaintance being so little, I am afraid my credit will be lesse, for that they commonly are somest believed that are best beloved, and they liked best, whom we have knowne longest, neverthelesse, the noble mind suspected no guile without cause, neyther condemneth any without proofe: having therefore notise of your heroicall hart, I am the better persuaded of my good hap. So it is Lucilla, that comming to Maples

Naples but to fetch fire, as the by wood is, not to make myvlace of above, I have found fuch flames , that I can neither quench them with the water of free will, neyther cole them with wife. Dome. Hoz as the Bop, the pole being neuer fo high, groweth to the ende, or as the dry Bech kindled at the rot, neuer leaveth butill it come to the top: of as one drop of poylon dispearleth it felfe into every baine : foaffection having caught holde of my heart, and the warks of love kindled my lyuer, will fodainlis, though fecretly, flame by info my head, and fpread it felfe into every finnew. It is your beauty (pardon my aboupt boloneffe) Laby, that bath taken enery part of me pailoner, and brought me buto this depe diffreffe : but feing women when one pay. feth them for their Deferts, Dame that be flattereth them to obs taine bis belire, 3 am bere prefent to pelo my felfe to fuch try. all, as your curtefic in this behalfe thall require . Det will you commonly object this to fuch as ferue you, and Carne to winne your god will, that hot love is cone cold: that the Bauin though it burne bright, is but a blage; that scalbing water if it fand a while, turneth almost to Ace : that Depper, though it be hot in the mouth, is colo in the maine: that the faith of men, though it frie in their woods, it fræfeth in their works : which things (Lucilla) albeit they be fufficient to reproue the lightneffe of some one, yet can they not convince every one of lewonesse: neyther ought the constancie of all, to be brought in question thozow the subtiltie of a feive. Hoz although the Worme enter reth almost into every wood, yet he exteth not the Ceder tree. Though the frone Cylindrus at every thenberclap, roule from the hill, get the pure fleke flone mounteth at the noise : though the ruft fret the harvelt Steele, pet both it not eate into the Co meraulo : though Polypus change his hiel, get the Salamans Der kæpeth his colour : though Proteus transforme himselfe in every thave, yet Pigmalion retaineth his old forme : though Aneas were to fickle to Dido, pet Troylus was to faithfull to Creffida : though others feme counterfaite in their babes, pet Lucilla perswade your selfe, that Euphues will be alwaies currant in his dealings. But as the true gold is tried by the touch.

and the pure flint by the troke of the your : fo the loyall heart of the faithfull louer, is knowne by the triall of his Lady: of the which triall (Lucilla) if you thall account Euphues Woothy, as fure your felfe he will be as ready to offer himfelfe a Sacrifice for vonr fwet fake, as your felfe fall be willing to imploy him in your fernice . Beither both be befire to be truffed and way. butill be thall be tried every way : neither both he crave credit at the first, but a good countenance, till time his belire shall be made manifelt by his beferts. Thus not blinded by light affece tion, but dayled with your rare perfection, and boloned by your erceving curtelle: I have bufolded mine entire loue, befiring you, having fo god leafure to give fo friendly anfiver as I may receive comfort, and you commendation. Lucilla, although the were content to heare this delired discourse, pet did the feme to be formiwhat displeased. And truly I know not whether it be per cultar to that fer to diffemble with those whom they most befire, or whether by craft they have learned outwarly to loath that. which in wardly they most love: vet wifely did she cast this in her head, that if the thold yould at the first assault, he would think her a light hullwife: if the thold reient him fcounfully, a bery hage dard: minding therfoze of he thould neither take hold of her promile, neither bukindnes of her precisenelle, the fed him indiffes rently with hope a dispaire, reason and affection, life and beath. Det in the end arguing wittily boon certaine questions, they fell to fuch agrament, as poze Philaucus would not haue as gred buto, if he had ben prefent, pet alwaics keping ber body ondefiled. And thus the replied.

Gentleman, as you may susped mee of identifie, in giving eare to your talke, so may you convince mee of lightnesse in aunswring such toyes: certes as you have made mine eares glow at the rehearfall of your love, so have you gauled my hart with the remembrance of your follie. Though you came to Naples as a stranger, yet were you welcome to my fathers house as a friend: And can you then so much transgresse the bonds of hone; (I will not say of honessie) as to solicite a sute more sharp to me then death? I have hitherto God be thanked,

lyucd.

loned without suspition of lewonesse, and thall I now incurre the danger of fenfuall liberty ? Wibat hove can you have to obtaine my loue, feing pet I could neuer afford you a goo looke ! Do you therefore thinke me eafily inficed to the bent of pour bowe, because I was easily entreated to litten to your late bil courfe : Dafeing me (as finely you glose) to erceil all other in heauty, did ve beme that I could erced all other in beautines? But pet I am not anary Euphues, but in an agony: for who is the that will fret or fame with one that loueth her, if this lone to belude mee. be not billembled . It is that which caufeth me most to feare, not that my beauty is buknowne to my felfe, but that commonly we pore wenches are beluded through light belæfe, and ve men are naturally enclined craftily to leade your life. Then the fore preacheth, the Bele perrift. The Croco. bile througeth greateft treafon boder most pittifuil teares : in a kisting mouth, there leeth a gauting mind. You have made fo large a profer of your fernice, and fo faire promifes of fibelitie, that were I not over charie of mine bonefty, you would inweitle me to thake hands with chaftity. But certes & will either lead a Wirgins lyfe in earth, (though I lead Apes in bell) or elfe follow the rather than the gifts : yet am I neither fo precife to refule thy profer, neyther to pecuith to tilbaine thy good will : fo ercellent alwaies are the gifts which are made acceptable by the bertue of the gruer. I bid at the first enterance differne the loue, but vet diffemble it. Thy wanton glaunces, thy fealbing lighs, thy louing lignes, caused me to blush for thame, and loke wan for feare, leaft they fould be perceined of any. Thefe fub till thifts, thefe painted practices (if it were to be wonne) would some weane me from the teat of Vella, to the topes of Venus Belides this, the comie grace, the rare qualities, the erquilite perfection . were able to move a mind halfe mortified to trans greffe the bands of maybenly modelty. But God theid Lucilla, that thou Choulboft be forarcleffe of thine honour, as to commit the fate therof to a ftraunger. Learne thou by me Euphues, to Despise those things that be amiable, to forgoe belightfull prace tiles, belæue me it is pitty to abliaine from pleafure. Thou

Thou art not the first that hath solicited this first. Dut the first that goeth about to seduce me, neither discerned that more then other, but datest more then any, neither has thou more art to discover the meaning, but more hart to open the mind. But thou preferrest me before the lands, the lywings, the lyfer than offerest the selfer a sacrifice for my fecuritie, thou profered me the whole and onely sourraigntie of the service and profess me the whole and onely sourraigntie of the service and the hard harted if should not long the hard harted albeit ham not, but truly source the scannor, dishoin sould the to be my Louer.

Dozeover, I have not beene view to the Court of Cupide, wherin ther he more flights the there he Darts in Achon, then Been in Hyble, then flarres in heaven. Beforesthis, the common people here in Naples, are not outly both here flightflows of other mens matters and manners, but also very ivalous oner other mens children and maybens, eyther therefore differible the fancie, or defil from the folly.

But why hondoes then desile from the one, seeing then cante cunningly distemble the other. Profether is now gone to Verice, and as a moncertaine of his returne, so am a not pring to the cause of his travell: But yethe is softom hence; that he seeth me in his absence. Inowest thou not Euplines, that kings have long armes, and Kulers large reachers: Reither let this comfort the, that at his departure he deputed the in Philamus place. Although my face causet him to mission my loyalty, yet my faith enforceth him to give me this libertie; though he be suspitious of my faire hield, yet is he secure of my series honesty.

But alasse Euphues, what truth can there be found in a tranailer? what trust in a firanger? whose words and books both watch but for a wind, whose feets are ever feeting, whele faith plighted on the shore is turned to periory, when they how faile. The more traiterous to Phillist then Demophon? yet her a tranailer. The more periored to Dido then Ances? and he a stranger: both these Ducknes, both they Caitisses. The imore false to Ariadne then Theseus? yet he a Sailer. The more fickle to Medea then Iason? yet he a starter? both these baugh

W

But yet Jam not sofencelesse, altogether to reset your sermice: which if J were cectainly assured to pisckode of a simple
mind, it should not receive so simple a reward. And what greater triall shall I have of thy simplicitie and truth, then thine
owns request, which desireth a triall, I, but in the coldest flint
there is not fire, the Bie that hath homey in her month, hath a
sing in her taile: the Træthat beareth the sweetes fruit, hath
a sower sap: yea, the woods of men, though they same smooth
as Dyle, yet their harts are as croked as the stake of Juie, I
would not Euphues that thou shouldest condemne me of rigeur,
in that I sake to assuge thy solly by reason: but take this by
the way, that although as yet I am disposed to like of none, yet
whensever I shallone any, I will not forget the: in the mean
season, account me thy friend, sor thy soe I will never be.

Euphues was brought into a great quantarie, and as it were a colo flowering, to beare this newe kind of kindnesse: such sweet meat, such sower sauce, such faire words, such faint promises; such bot loue, such colo desire: such certaine hope, such sodaine change; and stood like one that had loked on Medusaes

head, and fo bad ben turned into a ffone.

Lucilla, fæing him in this pittifull flight, and fearing hee would take fland if the Lure were not cast out, toke him by the hand, and wringing him softly, with a smyling countenance began thus to comfort him.

Dethinkes Euphues changing to your colour boon the to.

meat? a penny for your thought.

Ditres (quoth he) if you would buy all my thoughts at that price, I thould never be weary of thinking, but fering it is to deare, reade it and take it for nothing.

It feemes to me (faio the) that you are in fome boton fin

Die what colours you might best weare for your Ladie.

Indede Lucilla, you levell threwolfe at my thought, by the aime of your owne imagination, for you have given but o me a true Louers knot, wrought of changeable Hilk, and you deme, that I am devicing how I might have my colours changeable

alto,

alfo, that they might agræ: But let this with such sover and deuises passe, if it please you to commaund mee any service, amhære ready to attend your pleasure. Ho service Euphues, but that you kæpe silence butill I have bitered my mind: and secrecie when I have busloted my meaning. If I should oftend in the one I were to bold, if in the other to beauty.

Well then Euphues (fapoe the) fo it is, that for the hope that I conceine of thy loyaltie, and the happy fucceffe that is like to enfue of this our leue, I am content to palo the the place in my heart which thou befireft and beferuelt aboue all other. Tubich confent in me, if it may any waves been thy contentation on, fure I am, that it will enery way worke my comfort. But as evther thou tenderell mine honour oz thine owne fafety, ble fuch fecrecie in this matter, that my father have no inkling bereof, befoze I have framed his mind fit foz our purpole. And though women have fmall force to overcome men by reafon, yet haue they fortune to bntermino them by pollicy. The foft brops of raine pearce the bard Barble, many frokes overtheolo the talleft Dake, a filly woman in time, may make fuch a breach in a mans heart, as ber teares may enter without reliffance: then boubt not, but I will fo babermind mine olde father, as ouickly & wil intop my new friend. Tulb Philaurus, was liked for falbion fake, but never loved for fancy fake : and this I bow by the faith of a Wirgine, and by the loue & beare thie (foz greater bands to confirme my bow I have not) that my father fall Coner martir me in the fire, then marry me to Philaneus.

Tho, no, Euphues, thou onely halt wonne me by lone, and that onely weare me by law, I force not Philautus his furie, so I may have Euphues his friendhip. Heither will I prefer his possessions before thy person, neyther esteme better of his lands then of thy lone. Ferardo; shall sweet disherite me of my patrimony, then dishender me in breaking my promise.

It is not his great Panois, but thy god manners, that shall make my marriage. In token of which my sincere affection, I give the my hand in pawne, and my hart so; over to be thy Lucila. Into whom Luphues answered in this manner.

**©** 3

## Euphues!

ters to great Brinces . both they bufaithfull of their promites. Is it then like that Euphues will be faithfull to Lucilla, beine in Naples but a fotourner a 3 baue not yet foggotten the inner tine. (4 cannot other wife terme it) which then mabell against heauty faving: it was a beceiffull baite with a beadly boke. and a finet poplan in a painted pot. Canft thou then be lo wninife to Smollow the bait which will been the batte? To fwill the beink that will expire the Date? To befire the wight that will inothe the beath ! But it may be that with the Scotpion thou canft fan on the earth, or with the Quaile & Robuck, be fat with voiton: or with beauty line in all brauery . I feare mee thou half the Some Contineus about the which is named of the contrary, that though thou pretend faith in the words, thou benifelt fraud in the hart : and though thou feeme to veefer lone, thou artinga med with luft, And what for that . Though thou have earth the feebs of Backet which breede incontinency, yet have I chersed

the leafe Creffe, which maintaineth movetty.

Though then beare in thy bolome the bearbe Araxa, most noplome to birginity, pet haue I the flone that groweth in the mount Tmolus, the bobolber of chattity, Pour may Centlemen account me for a cold 1820phet, thus haltilie to binine of your Disposition: parson me Emphues, if in lone & cast beyond the Done, which bringeth be women to endlette moane. Although I my felfe were never burnt whereby I thould bread the fire. get the leasthing afothers in the flames of fancte, warneth me to beware : Though as pet I never tries any faithleffe, wherby I thould be fearfull, pet bane I reade of manie that have beine periureb. lobich caufeth me to be carefull : though Jam able to convince none by profe, yet am I enforced to fulved one bugn probabilities. Alane, we filly fonles which have neither wit to Decipher the wiles of men, not wifebome to biffemble our affece tion, neither craft to traine in poung Louers, neither courage to withfrand their incounters neither diferetion to difeern their boubling, neither bars barts to recent their complaints : ive I lay, are fone enticed, being by nature fimple, e eafily intangled. being apt to receive the impression of lone. But alaste it is both - 1 common

common and lamentable, to be bold fimplicity intrapped in tobe tiltie, e those that have most might to be insected with most matlice. The Spider weaveth the fine web to hang the flie, the Wolfe weareth a faire face to become the Lambe, the Petrins striketh at the Patridge, the Eagle snappethat the flie amen are alwaise laying baits for women substants the weaker befels: but as yet I could never heare man by such snares to entrap man: for true it is y menthemselves have by ble observed, that it must be a hard winter when one willlese eateth another.

I have reade, that the Bull beeing tyed to the Fig. træe, low feth his Arength, that the whole heard of Decre And at the gaze if they anell a tweet Apple: that the Dolphin by the found of Bulick, is brought to the thoare. And then no meruaile it is, that if the fierce Bull be tamed with the Fig. træe, if that women being as weake as Shepe, be overcome with a Figge: if the wild Decre be caught with an Apple, that the tame Damos fell is wonne with a blostome: if the fiete Dolphin be allured with harmony, that women be entangled with the melodic of mens spech, faire promites, and solemne presentations. But folly it were for me to marke their mischiefes, lith I am ney ther able, neither they willing to amend their manners: it becommeth me rather to shewe to bat our sere should do, then to over what yours both.

And feeing I cannot by reason restraine your importunate sute, I will by rigour done on my selse, cause you to restaine the meanes. I would to God Ferardo were in this point like to Lysander, which would not suffer his daughters to weare gozeous apparrell, saying it would rather make them common then comby, I would it were in Naples a Lawe, which was a custome in Agypt, that women should alwaies goe bare-sote, to the intent they might keep themselues alwaies at home, that they shold be ever like to the Snaile, which hath ever his house on his head. I meane so to mortise my selse, that in seelets, I will weare Sackcloth: for Dwches and Bracelets, Lere and Caddis: for the Lute, whe the Distasse: so, the Pen,

the Bable : foz Louers Sonets, Dauids Bfalmes.

D 2

But yet Jam not so tencelesse, altogether to reset your service: which if I were cectainly assured to piocked of a simple ming, it should not receive so simple a reward. And what greater triall shall I have of the simplicitie and truth, then thine owne request, which desired a triall, I, but in the coldest finit there is not fire, the Bie that hath homey in her month, hath a sing in her taile: the Tracthat beareth the sweets fruit, hath a sower sap: yea, the woods of men, though they same smooth as Dyle, yet their harts are as croked as the stake of Juie, I would not suphues that thou shouldest condemne me of rigeur, in that I seeke to assuge thy solly by reason: but take this by the way, that although as yet I am disposed to like of none, yet whensever I shalloue any, I will not forget the: in the mean season, account me thy friend, so thy soe I will never be.

Euphues was brought into a great quantarie, and as it were a cold shouering, to heare this newe kind of kindnesse: such sweet meat, such sower sauce, such faire words, such faint promises: such hot loue, such cold desire: such certaine hope, such soddine change: and stood like one that had loked on Medusaes

bead, and fo bad been furned into a ffone.

Lucilla, freing him in this pittifull flight, and fearing hee would take fland if the Eure were not cast out, toke him by the hand, and wringing him softly, with a smyling countenance began thus to comfort him.

Dethinkes Euphues changing to your colour boon the for Daine, you will fone change your coppy: is your mind on your

meat? a penny for your thought.

Diffres (quoth he) if you would buy all my thoughts at that price, I should never be weary of thinking, but feeing it is so beare, reade it and take it so, nothing.

It feemes to me (fait the) that you are in fome boton ffu-

Die tubat colours you might best weare for your Ladie.

Indede Lucilla, you leuell the wolfe at my thought, by the aime of your owne imagination, for you have given but o me a true Louers knot, wrought of changeable wilk, and you deme, that I am deviling how I might have my colours changeable allo.

also, that they might agree: But let this with such soves and devises passe, if it please you to commaund mee any service, I am here ready to attend your pleasure. Ho service Euphues, but that you keepe silence butill I have ottered my mind: and servece when I have unfolded my meaning. If I should oftend in the one I were to bold, if in the other to beastly.

Well then Euphues (fayor the) fo it is, that for the hope that I conceive of thy loyaltie, and the happy facceffe that is like to enfue of this our leve, am content to pelo the the place in my heart which thou befireft and beferueft aboue all other, which confent in me, if it may any wayes been thy contentation on, fure I am, that it will enery way worke my comfort. But as eyther thou tenderell mine honour oz thine owne fafety, ble fuch fecrecie in this matter, that my father have no inkling bereof, befoze I have framed his mind fit foz our purpole. And though women have small force to overcome men by reason, vet have they fortune to bnoerming them by pollicy. The foft Drops of raine pearce the bard Marble, many frokes overtheoly the talleft Dake, a filly woman in time, may make fuch a breach in a mans heart, as ber teares may enter without reliftance : then poubt not, but I will fo bnbermind mine olde father, as ouickly I wil intop my new friend. Tufb Philaurus, was liked for fathion fake, but never loved for fancy fake : and this & boto by the faith of a Wirgine, and by the loue & beare this (foz greater bands to confirme my bow I have not that my father thall Toner martir me in the fire, then marry me to Philaneus.

Mo, no, Euphues, thou onely hall wonne me by lone, and thalt onely weare me by law, I force not Philautes his furie, so I may have Euphues his friendhip. Deither will I prefer his possessions before thy person, neither esteme better of his lands then of thy love. Ferardo; thall somer disherite me of my patrimony, then dishenour me in breaking my promise.

It is not his great Papoes, but thy god manners, that Chall make my marriage. In token of which my fincere affection, I give the my hand in pawne, and my hart for ever to be thy Lucila. Unto whom Euphues answered in this manner.

Ø 3

# Euphues:

If my tongue were able to biter the loves that my bart bath conceined, I feare me though I be well beloued, pet I Conle baroly be beleued. (Ah my Lucilla, how much am I bound to the which preferret mine bnworthines , before the fathers meath: my happines, before thine owne mil-fortune : my loue, befoze thine owne life ? Bowe might I ercell the in curtelle, whom no mortall creature can excede in conffancie ? I find it now for a fetled truth which earft accounted for a vaine talk. that the purple die will neuer faine, that the pure Cinet will nsuer lofe his fauoz, that the greene Laurell will neuer change colour, that beautie can neuer be blotted with biscurtefie . As touching fecrecie in this behalfe, affure pour felfe, that 4 will not to much as tell it to my felfe. Commaund Euphues torun. to ribe, to bnbertake any exploit be it never fo bangerous, to bazaro himfelfe in any enterpaize be it never fo befperate . As they were thus pleasantlie conferring the one with the other, Liuia (whom Euphues made bis stale) entered into the Barloz, onto whom Lucilla fpake in thefe termes.

Doeft thou not laugh Liuia, to fe my ghofflie Father kepe me heere fo long at Maift : Trulie (answered Livia) me thinks that you finile at fome pleafant thift, eyther he is flowe in enquiring of your faults, or you flacke in answering his questions: and thus being supper time, they all fat powne, Lucilla well pleased, no man better content then Euphues, who after his repatt, bauing no opostunitie to confer with his Love, had fmall luft to continue with the Gentle women any longer, feeing there fore he could frame no means to work his belight, he couned an excule to hatten his beparture, promiting the next morning to trouble them againe, as a quest more bold then welcome, ale though inded be thought himfelfe to be better welcome, in fape ing that he would come. But as Ferardo went in polt, to be returned in half, having concluded with Philaurus, that the marriage hould immediatly be confumated, which waought fuch a content in Philautus, that he was almost in an extalle, throwb the extremity of his pallions: fuch is the falnes and force of pleas fure, that there is nothing to bangerous, as the fruition, pet

knowing

knowing that belaies bring bangers, although benething boub. ten of Lucilla, tohom be loued, vet feared be the ficklenes of old men, which is alwaies to be miltruffed. De baged therfoze Fcrardo to breake with his baughter, who being willing to have the match made, was content incontinentlie to procure the meanes: finding therefore his daughter at lepfure, and bauing

knowledge of her former love, frake to her as foloweth.

Dere Daughter, as thou half long time lived a maiden, fo now thou muft learne to be a Mother, and as I have ben care. full to bring the by a Wirgine, foam I now beffrous to make the a wife. Deither ought I in this matter to ble any perfinal ons, for that Daidens comonly now a bates are no foner borne. but they begin to bribe it, neither to offer any great portions, for that thou knowed thou thalt inherit all my polletions. Wine only care bath ben bitherto, to match the with fuch a one, as hold be of god wealth, able to maintaine the: of great worthin. able to compare with the in birth : of honest conditions, to be ferue thy loue, & an Italian born, to enion my lands. At the laft, I have found one answerable to my belire, a gentleman of great revenues of a noble progeny of honest behavious, of comb perforage, boan & baought bp in Naples, Philaurus (the friend as 3 ceffe) the hufband Lucilla, if thou like it : neither canft thou biflike him, who wanteth nothing that thould cause thy liking, meither bath any thing that should been thy lothing.

And furely & rejoyce the moze, that thou thalt be linked to bim in marriage, whom thou halt loued as I beare being a Bayben, neither can there any tarres kindle betwene them. where the minus be fo bnited, neither any icalouffe arile, where lone bath fo long ben fetled . Therfoge Lucilla , to the end the befire of either of you may now be accomplished to the belight of you both. I am here come to finish the contract by ciuing hands. which you have already begun betweene your felues in topning of barts, that as Goo both witnesse the one by your confciences, to the world may tellife the other by your convertations. And therefore Lucilla, make fuch aunfwere to my requeff, as may

like me, and fatiffe the friend.

Lucilla.

Lucilla abather with this faraine speech of her frather, get boloned by the lone of her friend, with a comely bathfulnesse,

anfinered hun in this manner

Reverend bir, the Iwetneffe that & hane found in the bit. pefiled fate of Tairginitie, caufeth me to loath the fower fauce which is mired with Batrimony, and the quiet lyfe which ? have tried being a Dayben, maketh me to Thun the cares that are alwaies incident to a Wother , neyther am & fo westerto the world, that I thould be moused with great peffellions, nepther to bewitched with wantennelle, that I fould be enticed with any mans proportion, neither if I were forifoleb, would The fe proud , to beare one of noble Brogenie , or fo pretite, to chose one onely in mine owne Countrey : for that commenty thefe things happen alwayes to the contrary. Doe we not fee the Roble to match with the bale, the rich with the rage, the Italian oftentimes with the Postingale ? As love knoweth no lawes, fo it regardeth no conditions: as the Lover maketh no paule where be liketh, to be maketh no confcience of thefe ible ceremonies. In that Philaurus is the man that threatneth fuch kindneffe at my bands, and fuch curteffe at yours, that he Chould account me his wife before he twoe me, certaine bee is like to make his reckoning twice, because he reckoneth with out his Belleffe . And in this Philantus would enther theine bimfelfe of great wifebome to verfwade, or me of great light neffe to be allured : although the Load frome beatweth reon, pet it cannot mone gold: though the Jet gather by the frame, vet can it not take by the pure trele . Although Philaurus thinks bunfelfe of bertue fufficient to win his Louer, pet thall be not obtaine Lucilla. 3 cannot but finile to beare that a marriage Could be folemnized, where never was any mention of alle ring, anothat the woing thould be a day after the weating. Certes if when 3 loked merrily on Philaurus he Damed ffin the way of marriage, or if feing me bispoled foieff, be toke me in god earnest: then fure be might gather some prefumption of my loue, but no promife. But me think, it is god reafen, that I Chould be at mine owne Brivall, and not given in the Church before

before & knowe the Bribegrame. Therefore dere Father, in mine opinion, as there can be no bargaine, where both be not acred , neither any Indentures lealed, where the one will not confert; focan there be no contract; where both be not confert : no Banes afked lawfully, where one of the parties forbiddeth them : no marriage made, where no match was meant. But ? will heresafter frame my felfe to be cop, feing 3 am claimed for a wife because I baue beine curteous : and dive my selle to melancholly, feing I am accounted wonne, in that I have ben merry . And if cuery Bentleman be made of the mettall that Philaurys is, then I feare I thall be challenged of as many as Thane bled to combany with, and be a common wife to all those that have commonly reforted hither . By butie therefore euer referued, I bere on my knes fortweare Philautus for my buf. band, although I accept him for my friend, and feine I fhall bardly be induced ever to match with any 3 befeech you, if by pour fatherly lone I thall be compelled, that I may match with fuch a one, as both I may tone, and you may like.

Ferardo beeing a grave and wife Gentleman, although he were throughly angrie, yet he difficulted his fury, to the ende that he might by craft discouer her fancie, and whispering Philaurus in his eare (who stod as though he had a steam his eare,) desired him to keepe stence, butill he had morrimined her by subtilitie, which Philaurus having graunteb, Ferardo began to

lift his daughter with this betice.

Lucilla, thy colour theweth the to be in a chollar, and thy hot woods beway thy heavie wath: but be patient, fixing all my talks was onely to trie the: I am neyther so wnaturall to well the against thine owne will, neither so malitious to we o the to any against thine owne lyting if so, well I know what iarres, what icalouse, what strife, what soomes ensue, where the match is made rather by compusion of the Parents, then by the consent of the parties: neither soe I like the the less, in that thou likest Philaums so little, neither can Philaums love the the worse, in that thou lovest the fesse so well, withing the rather to stand to the chamee, then to the choice of any other.

Wut.

But this graueth me molt, that thou art almost volved to the vaine order of the Besall virgins, despising, or at the least not desiring the facred bonds of lund her bed. If the Spother had been of that mind when the was a maiden, that haddes not now been being to be of this mind to be a Mirgine. Whate with the soller, what sender profit they bring to the Common wealth, what slight pleasure to themselves, what great griefe to they parents, which is most in their off-spring, and desire most to inion the noble and blessed name of Grandsather. Thou knowest that the talless Ah is cut downe for Hoell, for it beareth no fruite: that the Town that gives no milke, is brought to the slaughter: that the Prone that gathereth no honney is contended; that the womanthat maketh her selfe barren by not marrying, is accounted among the Grecian Ladies worse then a carrion, as Homere reporteth.

Therfore Lucilla, if thou have any care to be a comfort to my hoarie haires, or a commoditie to the common weale, frame the felfe to b honourable effate of Datrimony, which was fancified in Baradice, alowed of the Batriarks, ballowed of the old 1020. whets, and commended of all perfons . If thou like any, be not alhamed to tell it me, which onely am to erhout the, yea, and as much as in me lyeth, to commaund the to love one. If he be bale, the blood hall make him noble : If beggerly, the goes thall make him wealthy : If a Granger, thy freedome thall enfranchile bim : If he be young , be is the mote fitter to be the Dhere: If he be olde, the lyker to thine aged father . Foz 7 had rather thon thouldest leade a life to thine owne lyking in garth, then to the great toments leade Aves in bell. The bolde therfore to make me partner of the defire, which will be partatter of thy bileafe : yea, and a fortherer of thy belights; as far as either my friends, 02 my lands, 02 my life will tretch.

Lucilla perceiving the diff of the old For her Father, ways to with her felfe what was best to be done; at the tast, not waysing her Fathers ill will, but encouraged by love, shaped him an answere, which pleased Ferordo but a little, and pinched

Philaurus on the perfons five, on this manner.

Dere Hather Ferardo, although I lie the bait you lay to catch me, pet I am cotent to fwollow the hoke, neither are von moze Defirous to take me napping, the I willing to confelle me medning . So it is, that love bath as well inveigled me as ethers. which make it as ftrance as 7. Beither bo 7 loue bim fo means lie, that I thould be athamed of his name, neither is his perfor nage to meane, that I thould love him thanfully : it is Euphues that lately ariued here at Naples, that bath battered the bulwarke, of my breaft, and shall thortly enter as conquerour into my bosome. What his wealth is, I neither know it, not way it: what his wit is, all Naples both know it, and wonder at it : neis ther have I been curious to enquire of his Bronenitours, for that A knowe to noble a mind could take no originall but from a noble man : for as no Bird can loke against the Sunne, but those that be beed of the Cagle, neither any Wawke feare fo bigh as the band of the Bobby, fo no wight can have fuch ercellent qua lities, except be befcend of a noble race, neither be of fo bigh cas pacitie, bnleffe be be of a high progeny. And I hope Philautus will not be my foe, fæing Thane chofen bis dere friend neither you father be bifpleafed, in that Philaurus is bifplaced . Bon nebe not mule that 3 Could lo fobainlie be entangled : Loue gives no reason of chopce , neyther will it suffer any repuls. Myrrha was enamoured of her naturall father . Biblis of her Bother, Phædra of ber Sonne in law. If nature can no way relift the furie of affection, bow fould it be flated by wifebome? Ferardo interrupting her in the mible of ber difeourfe, although he were moued with inward grudge, pet be wifely repreffed his anger, knowing that tharpe woods would but tharpen her fromara will, and thus answered her briefely.

Lucilla, as I am not presently to grant my god will, so mean I not to reprehend the choice, yet wildome willeth me to pause, butill I have called (what may happen) to my remembrance, and warnest the to be circumspect, least the rash conceit bring a sharp repentance. As for you Philaurus, I would not have you despaire, swing that a woman both oftentimes change her desire. Unto whom, Philaurus in sew words made answere.

19 2

Certainly

Certainly Ferardo, I take the lette griefe, in that I feeher to greedy after Euphues, and by so much the moze I am content to leave my sute, by how much the moze the semeth to visitine my service: but as for hope, because I would not by any means take one dramme thereof, I will abiture all places of her above, and leath her companie, whose countenance I have so much louch: as for Euphues, and there staying his speech, he stang out of the boores, and repayring to hys lodging, bettered these

wordes.

Ah molt dillembling weetch Euphues, D counterfaite come vanion, couloeft thou bnber the thew of a feofalt friend, cloake the mallice of a mostall for ? Under the coulour of fimplicitie, Mouve the Image of beceite ? Is thy Linia, turned butomy Lucilla? thy love, to my Louer: thy benetion to my Saint? 35 this the curtefie of Athens, the cauelling of Sebollers, the craft of Grecians ? Couldest thou not remember Philaurus, that Greece is never without some wylie Vlisses, never boid of some Synon, never to fæke of fome Deceitfull Chifter ? As it not commonly fapo of Grecians, that craft commeth to them by kind, that they learne to beceive in their crable ? Wilhy then bib his pretended curteffe, bewitch the with fuch credulity & Shall my god will be the cause of his ill will? Because I was content to be his friend, thought he me mete to be made his fole ? I fee nowe that as the fill Scolopidus in the flood Araris, at the waring of the Mone, is as white as the driven Snowe, and at the wayning, as black as the burnt coale : fo Euphues, which at the first encreasing of our familiarity was bery sealous, is now at the laft call become moft faithleffe.

But why rather exclaime I not against Lucilla, whose wanton lookes caused Euphues to violate his plighted faith? Ab weetched wench, canst thou be so light of love, as to chaunge with every wind? So vinconstant, as to preferre a new Louer before an old friend? Ah well I wot, that a new Brown show peth cleane, and a new garment maketh the leave off the olde, though it be litter, and new Mine causeth the to so sake the olde, though it be better a much lyke to the men in the Iland

Scyrum,

Sevrum, who pull by the old trees when they fee the pound beain fo foring, and not bulike buto the widow of Lesbos, which thannaed all her olde gold for nel glatte : Dane I fernedthe thee yeares faithfully, and ain I ferued fo bokindly ! Shall the fruite of my delire be turned to difoaine : 1But bnleffe Euphues havinueigled the, thou hablt pet bene constant : yea, but if Euphues had not freme the willing to be wonne, he would never hane woed the: but had not Euphues enticed the with faire woods, thou wouldft never have loved him! but haoft not thou ginen him faire lokes, he would neuer haue like the: 3, but Fuphues gave the onfet : 1. but Lucilla gave the scraffon : 1. but Fuphues first brake bis mind: 3, but Lucilla firit bewraies ber meaning. Enth, why goe I about to ercufe any of them, feing I have tuft caufe to accuse them both . Depther ought I to bis pute which of them bath profered me the greatest villanie, fith that eyther of them bath committed periurie. Bet although they have found mee bull in perceining they? fallehoode, they thall not finde me flacke in revenging they, follie . As for Lucilla, feing I meane altogether to forget ber, I meane alfo to foraine her leaft in feking meanes to be reuenged, mine ploe befire to be renned.

Philaurus hauing thus discoursed with himselfe, began to maite to Euphues as followeth.

A Lthough hetherto Euphues I have theined the in my hart as a trustic friend, I will thin the hereafter as a trothlesse foe: and although I cannot lee in the lesse witte then I was wont, yet doe I sind lesse honestie. I perceive at the last (although being deceived it be to late) that Poulke, though it be lived in the smell, is sower in the snacke: that the lease of the Ceder tree, though it be faire to be seene, yet the sirop depriveth sight: that friendship, though it be plighted by shaking of the hand, yet it is shaken off by fraud of the hart. But thou has not much to boast of, so, as thou has wonne a fickle Lady, so hast thou loss a faithfull friend. How canst thou be secure of her constancie, when thou hast had such triall of her lightnesse? How

cank thou assure thy selfe that the will be saithfull to the, which bath beene saithlesse to me e Ah Euphues, let not thy credulity be an occasion for the hareaster to practise the lyke crueltie. Remember this, that yet there hath never beene any faithlesse to his friend, that hath not also bene fruitlesse to his God. But I way the trecherie the lesse, in that it commeth from a Grecian, in whom is no truth. Though I be to weake to wrastle so, a reuenge, yet God, who permitteth no guile to be guiltlesse, will shortlie requite this insurie: though Philaurus have no policie to undermine the, yet thine owne practices shall be suf-

ficient to ouer-throw tha.

Couldest thon Fuphues for the lone of a fruitlesse pleasure. biolate the league of faithfull friendhip? Dioft thou way more the enticing lokes of a leipe Wench, then the entire lone of a loyall friend ? If thou biodest betermine with thy felfe at the first to be faile, why biobest thou fiveare to be true ? Afto be frue, why art thou falle ? If thou wall minbeb both fallie and forgedlie to beceine me . Inhy dibbelt thou flatter and diffemble with me at the first ? If to love me, why bott thou flinch at the latt ? Afthe arched bands of amitie bid belight the. why bibit thou breake them ? If they billike the , why bioff thou prayle them ? Doeft thou not know that a perfect friend flould be like the Clattes woante, which fineth moft bright in the barke, 02 like the pure Frankenfence, which fmelleth mott fwet when it is in the fire : or at the leaft, not bulike to the Damaike Hofe, which is (wester in the Still, then on the Calk ? Butthou Euphues, bolt rather refemble the Swallow, which in the Some mer crepeth onder the cues of eucry bonle, and in the Winter leaueth nothing but burt behind her: 02 the Bumble 15e, which bauing lucked Boney out of the faire flower both leane it, and loath it:02 the Spider which in the finelt web both hang the fair reft flie! Doeft thou think Euphues, that thy craft in betray ing me, thall any whit cole my courage in renenging thy billanie : 02 that a Gentleman of Naples, will put by fuch an inturie at the hands of a Scholler ? And if 3 boo, it is not for want of courage to maintain my intiquarell, but of will, which thinketh Coone

frome to get so vaine a conquest. I know that Menelaus so, histen peres war, endured ten peres woe, that after all his strifts be wan but a strumpet, that so, all his trauaile, he reduced (I sannot say reclaimed) but a stragter: which was as much, in my indoment, as to strive so, a broken Glasse, which is god so, nothing: I wish the rather Menelaus care, the my selfe his conquest, that thou being deluded by Lucilla, maiest rather knowe what it is to be deceived, then I having conquered the, should

prone what it were to bring back a biffembler.

Desing therfoze there can no greater renenge light upon the, then that as thou half reaped where another hath forme, so another may thresh that which thou half reaped: I will pray that thou maiest be measured unto with the like measure that thou half meaten onto others: that is, as thou half thought it no constituce to betray me, so others may be me it no dishonesty to become the: that as Lucilla made it a light matter to softwear her old friend Philautus, so the may make it a mocke to softwear her meta phere Euphues. Which this come to passe, as it is like by my compasse, the shalf then se the troubles, a select the torments which thou half already throwns into the harts a eyes of others.

Thus hoping thoutlie to fee the as hopeleffe, as my felfe is barlege, I with my with were as effectually ended, as it is har-

tilie loked foz. And fo 3 leane the.

Thine once Philautus.

Philaurus dispatching a medenger with this Letter spardite to Euphues, went into the fieldes to walke there, eyther to disgest his choller, or chewe byon his melancholly. But Euphues having reade the contentes, was well content, setting his talke at naught, and aunswered his tauntes in these gybing tearmes.

I Remember Philaurus, howe valiantlie Aiax hoalted in the feats of armes, yet Villet bare away the armour seit may be, that though thou crake of thine owne courage, thou mailter a feats of the courage of the same callies

califie lose the conquest. Does thou thinke Euphues such a day. Card, that he is not able to withstand the courage, or such a duly lard that he cannot describe the crast. Alasse god souls, it fareth with the as with the Benne, which when the Puttocke hath caught her chicken, beginneth to cathle, and thou having lose the Loner, beginness to prattle. Buth Philaurus, I am in this point of Eusipides his mind, who thinks it lawfull for the desire of a kingdome to transgresse the bounds of honeste, and so, the love of a Lady, to biolate and breake the bonds of amitie.

The friendship betweene man and man, as it is common, so it is of course; betweene man and woman, as it is soloome, so it is followed to it success, the one proceeds of the similating of manners, the other of the successive of the hart; if thou haddest learned the first part of hawking, thou wouldest have learned to have held fast, of the first note of Descant, thou wouldest have kept

thy Sol, Fa, to thy felfe.

But thou cantt blame me no moze of folly, in leaning the to lone Lucilla, then thou maift reprove him of folithnesse, that bauing a Sparrome in his band, letteth ber goe to catch the Whelant, or bim of bufkilfulneffe that feth the Deron, lequeth to levell his that at the Stockbone : 02 the woman of corneffe. that having a beat Role in her bolome, throweth it away to and ther the fresh Wiolet. Loue knoweth no lawes: Dionot lubicer transforme bimilelfe into the Chape of Amphicrio , to imbrace Alcmana? Anto the forme of a Swan, to enioy Lada? Into a Bull, to bequile Io: Into a thowas of gold, to win Danae: Did not Neprune change himselfe into a Depfer, a Ram a filson. a Dolphin , onely for the loue of thofe be lufted after ? Die not Appollo connert himfelfe into a Schenbeard into a Bird into a Lyon , for the befire his had to brale his difeafe . If the Cobs thought no fcome to become Beaffs to obtaine their beft belas med, thall Euphues be so nice in changing his comple to gaine his Lady : 180, no, be that cannot diffemble in lone, is not moze thie to live and am of this mine; that both might and mailice. Deceit and trecherie, all pering, lany impietie may lainfully be committed in loue, which is lawleffe, in and the mail had see

In that they arguest Lacilla cellightness , the will bance in the light of the hois a Doeff thou not knowe that the weake Romacke if it be clayed with one viet, beth fonelt fur fet ? That the Clownes Barlich cannot safe the Courtiers Difeate to well as the pure Mnacle, that far fet and beare benght is good for Labies . That Enphues breing a muze baintie morfell then Philaurus ougit better to be accepted & Tuft Philaurus, fet the bart at reft, for thy hap willeth thee to gitte oner alt hope , both of my friendfip, and her lone : as for revenge, thou artifor to able to lend a blow, as 3 to ward it, neither moze bentrons to shallenge the combat, then I baliant to aunfivere the quarrell. As Lucilla was saught by fraute, fo thall the be kept by force ! and as thou wall to limple to efpie my craft , fo 3 thinke thou will be too weake to withfrand him roorage : if the renenge fand onely byon thy will, thou that never time to la my line. a; to have the will, and fo farewell.

esinfique friend . Fran rather to langue of seguing

This Letter being difpatchen, Euphues fent it, and Philaucus read it, who bifoaining those proud termes, difpained alfo to answere them, being readle to ribe with Ferrido

Euphues having for a space absented himselfe from the honse of Ferardo, because he was at home, longed sore to see Lucilla, which note appartunitie offered but being. Ferardo being gone agains to Venice with Phraneus, but in his absence one Curio a Gentleman of Naples of little wealth and less wit, hand too Lucilla her companie, and to inchamated her, that Euphues was also cast off with Philaurus, which thing being baknown to Euphues, caused him the sweet to make his repaire to the presence of his Lady, whom her studing in her muses, began pleasantly in this manner.

Mittreffe Lucilla, although my long ablence might breve your instanger, (for that Louers bestre nothing so much as of ten meeting) yet I hope my presence will vissolve your chollar (for that Louers are some pleased, when of their wishes they be fullis possessed) My absence is the rather to be excused, in that

3

your Father hath beine alwayes at homes foliole frommes fee med to threaten my ill fortime, and my prefence at the prefent the better to be accepted, in that I baue made lich foebie repape to your prefence. Unto whom Lucilla ainfluered with rthe gine Alicete, that for for and prove by this alicke.

Trulie Euphues you baue-milt the cuthien the Tivas net ther anarie with your long absence, nigther and well please fed at your prefence, the one gave me rather a good hove beere after never to fee you; the other giveth mee a greater occasion to abboars you, and that a diam's

Euphues beeing nipped on the bead, with a pale country nance, as though his foule had forfaken bis bodie, revigeo as foliowething of figure green et elgie and an office for indian office

Af this foraine channee Lavilla, proceed of anie befert of mine . A am beere not onelie to aunfluere the fait, but alle to make amendes for my fault : if of anie nelpe mother or mine to foglake your newe friend, 3 am rather to lament your incon-Cancie then to revenge it : but I hope that fuch hote loue cannot be fo foone colde, meyther theh fayth remarked with fuch Cobaine forgetfulnefferent guard alort minimarit chal at 6.37 et

Lucilla not albames to ronfefe ber follte - aunfweren him with this frump. and somether as in a total and and

Sir, whether your befertes on my beffre bane woought this chaunge, it will bote poplittle to know weither bo Trane a ments, neither feare a regence sas for feruent loue, von lingth there is no fire to hot, but it is quembed with water, neither affection to Arong, but it is weakened with reach. let this fuffice the, that thou knowell I care not for the will no all olls east

Induce (lapo Euphues) to amoine the raule of your alterne tion would hate me little freing the effect taketh fuch force. hade heard that women either lone entirely, or bate beablyiand fring you have put wee out of doubt afthe one, I must itedes perfmade my felfe of the other.

This chaunge will cause Philanens to laugh me to feoghe and pount the lightnette in turning to often . Such was the hope that I conceived of the constancie, that I fored not in all places

7007

places to blaze the localties but notome rathe once it will place me a lear, and the a light hulbuit.

shay (layd Lucilla) nowe that thou not laugh Philaurus to keene, feeing you have drunke both of one cup: in miferie Euphues, it is great comfort to have a companion. I doubt not but that you will both conspire against me to work some mischiefe, although I nothing feare your mallice: who so we recounterly the a liar for praising me, may also being you alease for being enamoured of me: and who seems won alease for the hing of you, may thinke the as lew in louing of me: for thou that thoughtest it lawfull to beceive the friend, must take no score to be becomed of the for.

Then I perceive Lucilla (faybe be) that I was made the fale, and Philaurus the laughing flocke: whole friendshipps (I must confesse indeed) I have refused to obtaine the favour; and sithens another bath wonne that we both have lost. I am content for my part, neither ought I to be greened, seeing thou art sickle.

Certes Explaces (fair Lucilla) you come win winden walf, for your welcome is but small, and your chiere is thee to be lefte, fancie grueth no reason of her chaunge, neither will be controled so, anie choyce: this is therefore to warne you, that from hencesofth you never solicite this sute, neither offer any may your service; I have chosen one (I must neves confesse) neyther to be compared to Philaurus in wealth, nor so there in the neyther in high to the wealth of you both: I thinke God gave it mee so, a inst plague in renouncing Philaurus and thosing this, and sithens I am an ensample to all women of lightnesse, and like also to be a myrror to all them of unhappinesse, by soil much the more patientlie, by soil much the more patientlie, by soil much the more patientlie, by soil much the more patientlie.

my fortone the more, in that it is so some, and by something fortone the more, in that it is so somethe, and by something more I lament it, by howe much the less I looked not for it, an that my welcome is so colde, and my there so simple, it

nathing tourbethine, feing your furie is to hofte, and my mis fortune to great, that I am neither willing to receive it, not you to bestow it. If tract of time, or want of trialt, had caused this Spetamorphosis, my grade had been emore tollerable, and your fleeting more excusable, but comming in a moment, on a secrete, bulloked for, but hought of, it increases my lorrowe,

and the Chame.

Euphues (quoth the) you make a long Paruell for a little Corne, and angle for the fish that is alreadic caught. Curio, year, Curio is he that bath my love at his pleasure; and shall also have my lyfe at his commaundement; and although you been him unworthie to entoy that, which early you accounted no wight worthie to imbrace, yet soing Jesterne him more worth then any, her is to be reputed as chiefe. The wolfe choseth him so, her make, that bath or both incure most transll so, her sake. Venus was content to take the black Smith with his potult facte. Cornelia here in Naples, distained not to lone a rune soiller.

As to, changing, bit not Helen the pearle of Greece, thy Country woman, first take Menelaus, then Theseus, and last of all Paris? If boute Beastes give be ensamples, that those are most to be lyked, of whom were are bost beloned, or if the Princesse of beautie Venus, and her heires, Helen and Cornelia, thew that our affection standers on our free will, then am I rather to be occused then accused. Therefore good Euphues be as marrie as you may be, so, time may so turne, that once

againe you may be.

pay Lucilla (layd he) my Paruell thall ceale, feeing others have reaped my comes as for angling to the fifth that is alreadie caught, that were but more folia. But in my mind if you he a fifth, you are cythet an Celo, which as footie as one bath hold on her taile, will flip out of his hand, or else a Pennow, which will be nibling at everise baite, but never biting: but what fifth foever you be, you have made both me and Philaurus to finallow a Cudgan.

If Curio be the person, I would neither with the agreater plagne,

stague, not him a beablier poplon . I for my part thinke him worthie of the, and thou bulvozthie of him, for although he be in bodie befouned, in minofoolith, an Innecent borne, a beg. der by mil fortane, yet both he beferue a better then thy felfe, whole corrupt manners hath framed thy heavenly hiew, whole light behauteur hath binmed the lights of thy beautie, whose buconffant mind hafh betrayed the innocencie of fo manie a Gentleman . And in that you bring in the example of a Weaff to confirme your folly, you thew therin your beattly difpolition, which is readie to follow fuch beafflines. But Venus played falle, and what for that? Deing her lightneffe ferued for an erample, I would with thou mighteft trie ber puniffment for a reward that being evenly taken in an you net, all the world might iuoge whether thou be fift og fielh, and certes in my mind no anale will bold thee, it muft be a net.

Corneha loued a Biller, and thou a mifer, can her follie er sufo thy fault? Helen of Greece, my Countrey woman borne, but thine by profesion, changed and rechanged at her pleafure, I graunt . Shall the lewonede of others animate the in thy lightneffe ? Thiby then poeff thou not haunt the Stues, because Lais frequented them? Willy boelf thou not love a Bull, feing Paliphae loued one ? Wilby art thou not enamoured of thy father, knowing that Myriba was fo incenfed ? Thefe are fet Downe that we biewing their incontinencie, fould die the like impubencie, not follow the like excelle, neither can they excule the of any inconstancie . Merrie I will bee as I may , but if I may hereafter as thou meaned, I will not, and therefore farewell Lucilla, the most inconstant that ever was nursed in Naples, farewell Naples, the most surfed Towne in all Italy, and women all farewell.

Euphues hauing thus ginen ber his talt farewell, yet being folitarie, began afreth to recount his forrow in this manner.

Ah Euphues, into what mil fortune art thou brought ? In what foraine milerie art thou wapped ? It is like to fare with the as with the Cagle, which bieth neither for age, nor with fickness, but with famine : for although the flowack hunger,

get the hart will not futter the to eate. And why thankelt them tozment the felfe for one, in whom is neither faith noz feruens cie : D counterfait loue of women, Dhincontant Bere. 3 bane loft Philautus . Thane loft Lucilla : I baue loft that which ? thall hardly find againe, a faithfull friend. Abfolith Euphues why piol thou leave Achens the nurle of wife Bome, to inhabit Naples the nourither of wantonnelle. Had it not ben better foz the to have eaten Salt with the Abilosphers in Grecce, then Suger with the Courtiers of lealy ? But behold the course of pouth, which alwaies inclineth to pleature, I fogloke mine old companions to fearch for new friends : I rejected the grave and fatherlie countaile of Eubulus, to follow the brainficke bumor of mine ofone will. I addicted my felfe wholy to the feruice of wo. men, to frend my life in the lays of Ladies, my lands in main. tenance of baquerie, my wit in the banities of ible Sonnets. 3 bad thought that women had been as we men, that is, true, faith full, sealous, and confrant : but I perceine they be rather toos bnto men by their fallbob, iealouffe, and inconstancie. I was halfe perswaded, that they were made of the perfection of men, and would be comforters, but noto 3 fe they have taked of the infection of the Servent, and will be corraftues.

The Philition faith, it is Daungerous to minifer Philicke bnto the Datient that hath a cold flomack and a bot liver, leaft in avuing warmth to the one, be enflame the other : fo berily it is hard to beale with a woman . whose words ferme feruent. Tobole bart is coniegled into bard Ace , leaft truffing their out. ward talke, he be betraged with their inward trecherie. 3 will to Athens, there to toffe my bakes, no moze in Naples to line with faire lekes. I will to frame my felfe, as all pouts heres after thall rather relovce to fee my amenament, then be anima. ted to follow my former life. Abilofophy, Whilicke, Diminitie. thall be my thuby. D the hidden fecrets of Pature, the eruzeffe Image of Bozail bertues, the equall ballance of inflice, the medicines to heale all difeafes, bow they begin to belight me. The Axiomaes of Ariftoele, the Maxims of Inflinian, the Aphorifmes of Galen, bane forminly made fuch a breach into my mind,

mind that I freme onely to befire them; which ois onely earth beteff them. If wit be employed to the honell truby of learning. what thing fo precious as wit? If in the iole trade of lone, what thing moze pellilent then wit ? The profe of late bath beine beriffed in mee, tohom Mature bath indued with a little wit. which Thave abuled with an obtimat will : most frue it is that the thing the better it is, the greater is the abule, and that there is nothing, but through the malice of manimar be abused. Doth net the fire (an Clement fo necestaric, that without it man cannot line) as well burne the house, as burne in the house, if it be abuled ? Doth not Triacle as well poplon as belve, if it beta. ken out of time ? Doth not Wine, if it be immoberatly taken? kill the fromacke, enflame the louer, mifchiefe the bunken & Doth not Bhilick beltrop if it be not well temperen ? Doff not Lawe accufe if it be not rightly interpreteb ? Doth not Dinis mitie condemne if it be not faithfully conftrued ? Is not porton taken out of the Dong-fuckle by the Spider, benome out of the Role by the Canker, bung out of the Daple tres by the Sepanis on: Quen fo, the greatelt wickeones is Dawne out of the oreas tell wit, if it be abused by will, az entangled with the woold. or inneigled with women. But fring I fer mine owne unbie tie, I will indeciour my felfe to amend all that is pall, and to be a mygrour of godlineffe bereafter. The Role, though a little it be eaten with the Canker, yet being billilled - veldeth Aues mater: the you, though fretted with rat, pet being burnt in the fire . (hineth bright : and wit , although it bath beine eateit with the Canker of his owne conceit, and fettered with the roll of baine loue, yet beeing purified in the Will of wifewome, and tried in the fire of scale, will thine bright, and mell (water in the notetballs of poung Bouices. duenelle rendered les ducte

Naples, a farewell to women, fonoine I doe grae a farewell to Naples, a farewell to women, fonoine I doe grae a farewell to the inoclo, meaning rather to macerate my lefe with mellanchollie, then pine in follie, rather chooling to ope in my brindle amideel my Bokes, then to court it in Icalie, in the companie of Lavies.

Euphues

Euphues having thus debated with bunfelfe, went to his bed, there either with fleepe to beceive his fancie, or with mus fing to renue his ill fortune, or recant his ald fallics. But it happened immediatite Ferardo to returne beme, who hearing this flraunge cuent, was not a little amased, and was noine more readie to exhort Lucilla from the leue of Curio, then before to the lyking of Philaurus. Therefore in all hall with watrie eyes, and a wofull bart, began on this manner to reafon with

bis baughter.

Lucilla , (Daughter 3 am albamed to call the, feing thou balt neither care of the fathers tender affiction, not of thine owne credite) what fourit bath inchaunted thy foirit, that every minute thou alterest the minde I thought that my boarie baires Could have found comfort by thy golden lackes, and my ratten age great eale, by thy ripe yeares; but alafte, 3 fe in the ney ther wit to order thy boings, neither will to frame thy felfe to discretion, neither the nature of a chile, neither the nature of a maiden neither (A cannot without teares (peake it) any regard to thine honour, neither any care of thine boneltie.

I am now enforced to remember thy Bothers beath, who I think was a Browhetelle in her life : for oftentimes the would lap, that thou habbelt more beautie, then was convenient for one that thould be honeft, and more cockering then was meete

for one that thenly be a fatron.

Willouid & bad never lives to be fo side, or thon to be fo shiftis nate, eyther would I had bied in my pouth in the Court, or thou in the craple : 3 wold to Coo that sither 3 had never ben boan, of thou never beed ? Is this the comfort that the Parent reas peth for all his care ? Is obstinacie payed for obedience & Aubburnelle rendered for butie ? malitious defperatnelle for filiall feare & perceine nowethat the inife Bainter fawe moze then the falify Barent can, who painted lone going belunivars, fave ing : it might well bescend, but ascend it could never . Danaus. whom they report to be the father of fiftie Chilozen, bab as mong them all, but one that difobered him in a thing most sifter nett: but I that am father to one moze then I wonlo be, ale though

though one be all, have that one most disobedient to me in a request lawfull and reasonable. If Danaus, seeing but one of his Daughters without awe, became himselse without mercie, what shall Ferardo doe in this case, who hath one and all, most bonnaturall to him in a most inst cause? Shall Curio enion the fruite of my transites, possesse the benefit of my labours, inherite the patrimonie of mine aumersers, who hath neither wise.

some to increase them, not wit to keepe them.

Milt thou Lucilla, bestow thy felfe on such a one, as hath neither condinesse in his bodie, not knowledge in his minde, not credite in his Countries. Dh I would then havdest exthen beene ener faithfull to Philancus, or never faithfuste to Euphues, or woulde thou wouldest bee most sickle to Curio. As thy beautie hath made there the blaze of Italia, so will the lightenesse make the the by-worde of the worlde. D Lucilla, Lucilla, woulde thou was less faire and more sortmate, exther of less honour or greater honessie, exther better minded or some buries.

Shall thine olde Father live to fee the match with a young foole : Shall my kinde bart bee rewarded with fuch bukinde bate : Ah Lucilla, thou knowest not the care of a father . noz the butie of a Childe, and as far thou art from pietie, as I from crueltie. Pature will not permit mee to bilberite my Daughe ter, and yet it will fuffer thee to difhonour the Father. Affectie on caufeth me to with thy life, and thall it entice thee to procure my beath? It is mine onelie comfort to fer thee flourish in thy youth, and it is thine to fie mee fabe in mine age. To come clube, I befire to line to feether profper, and thou to fix mes perrift. But why call I the effect of this banaturalnesse in thy teeth, feeing I mp felfe was the canfe : I made thee a woman; andthou half mabe me a foole : I brought thee by like a Cocke ney, and thou haft bandled me like a Cochicombe ( 3 fpcake it to myne owne flame ) A made more of thee then became a fra ther, and thou lefte of me then befemed a child. And thall my louing care be cause of thy wicked crneltiet Den, yea, am not the first that bath beine too carefull, not the last that shall

be handled to bunkindly: it is common to fee Fathers to fonde,

and children to froward.

chell Lucida, the teares which thou feel trickle bowne my thinkes, and my drops of blood (which thou cans not see) that fall from my hart, enforce me to make an end of my talke; and if thou have any dutie of a childe, or care of a friende, or cartests of a stranger, or feeling of a Christian, or humilitie of a reasonable creature, then release thy Father of griefe, and acquite thy selfe of bugratefulnesse: Atherwise thou shall but halten my death, and increase thine of one defame. Anhich if thou do, the gaine is mine, and the loss thine, and both insmite.

Lucilla enther to be witched that thee coulde not relent, of to inicked, that the would not peele to her fathers request, aun

fipered him on this manner.

Desre Father, as you would have mee to thew the dutie of a childe, to you aught to thewe the care of a Parent, for as the one kandeth in obedience, to the other is grounded upon reason. You would have me, as I owe dutie to you, to leave Curio, and I desire you as you owe me any good lone, that you linter mes to eniop him: If you accuse mee of timaturalnesse in that I yeslee not to your request, I am also to condense you of the hindunesse, in that you graunt not to my petition. You obica I know not what to Curio, but it is the eye of the Paisser that fatteth the Poste, and the lone of the woman that maketh the man.

To give realous to fancie, were to weigh the fire, and measure the winde. If therefore my delight bee the cause of your death, I thinks my lorrows would be an eccasion of your solder. And if you be angive because I am pleased, certre I beeme you would be content if I were deceased: which if it be so, that my pleasure breeds your paine, and more annois your toy, I may well saie that you are an unknow Father, and I am unfortunate this. But good father, either content your teste with my choice, or let me stande to the maine chamice, otherwise, the griefe will be mine, and the sault yours, and both intollerable.

Ferardo fæing his Daughter to have neither regarde of her bonour noz his request, conceined such an inward gricfe, that in thoat space he bied, leaving Lucilla the onely beire of his lands. and Curio to pollette them, but what end came of her, freing it is nothing incident to the billagy of Euphues; it were fuperfly ous to infert it, and fo incredible, that all women would rather wonder at it, then beleeve it : which enent being fo ftrange, 3 bab rather leave them in a mufe what it thoulds bee, then in a mase in telling what it was.

Philaurus bauing intelligence of Euphues his fucceffe, and the fallhoo of Lucilla, although be began to retopce at the miles rie of his fellow, yet feeing ber ficklenes, could not but lament ber folly, and pittie his friends mil fortune. Thinking that the

lightneffe of Lucilla entifed Euphues to fo great liking.

Euphues and Philaums having conference betweene thems felues, calling discurtelle in the teetheach to the other, but chiefly noting billoialty in the demeanour of Lucilla, after much talke, renued their olde friendibip, both abandoning Lucilla as

most abbominable.

Philautus was earnest to have Euphues tarry in Naples, and Euphues Defirous to have Philaurus to Athens, but the one was to addicted to the Court, the other to wedded to the Umivertitie, that each refused the offer of the other : pet this they agreed betweene themselues, that though their bovies were by diffance of place fewered, yet the conjunction of they minds, thould no uer be feperated by the length of time, as allienated by change of fople. I for my part faide Euplines, to confirme this league, give thee my hand and my hart, and fo likewife bid Philaurus, and fo haking hands, they bid bin each other fare well.

Euphues to the intent bee might brible the over-lathing at fections of Philaucus, conucied into his Studie a certaine Pami phlet, which be tearmed, A cooling Card for Philaucus, yet ge nerally to be applyed to all Louers, which I have inferted as

followeth.

A cooling Carde for Philaurus, and all fond Louers.



Aling with my felfe beeing idle, howe I might well be imployed (friend Philaurus) I could finde nothing either more fitte to continue our friendship, or of greater force to diffolue our folly, then to write of a remedy for that, which many judge

patt cure : for louie (Philaurus) with the which I have been fo tozmented, that I have loft my time, thou to troubled, that theu haft forgot reason, both so mangled with repulse, inneigled by Deceit, and almost murthered by bifbaine, that I can nepther remember our milerie without griefe, not rebreffe our milhaps without grones. How wantonly, yea, and how willinglie, have we abufed our golden time, and mifpent our gotten treafure? How curious were we to pleafe our Lady, bow careleffe to dif pleafe our Lozd ! Bow beuout in ferning our Bobbeffe , howe Defperate in fozgetting our Goo? Ab my Philaurus, if the wai Ling of our mony might not deboat be, vet the wounding of our minbes thould beterre be, if reason might nothing persuade be to wifebome, pet thams thoulde pronoke be to wit. If Lucilla reade this trifle, the will traight proclaime Euphues for a traps tour, and feeing me turne my tippet, will either thut mee out for a wrangler, or raft me off for a Tayer brawer : either conmince me of mallice in bewaying their flights, at condemne me of milchiefe, in arming young men againft fleting mint ons. And what then ? Though Curio be as hote as a toalf, get Euphues is as cold as a clock, though he be a Cock of the game, pet Euphues is content to be a crauen and ery creake: though Curio be old huddle and twang, lpfe he, pet Euphues had rather Mainhe in the wetting, then walte in the wearing . I knows Curio to bee Steele to the backe, Stanbarb bearer to Venus Campe, Twozne to the creive, true to the crowne, Bnight mare thall to Cupid, and have apparant to his kingdom. But by that time that he bath eaten but one buthell of falt with Lucilla, bee fhall

thall talte ten quarters of forrow in his lone, then that he finde for every pint of honny, a gallon of gall : for every bram of please fore, an ounce of paine, for every inch of mirth an ell of moane. and yet Philaurus, if there bee any man in Difpaire to obtaine his purpole, or lo obstinate in his opinion, that baning lost his freedome by folly, would also look his life for lour, let bim revaire bether, & be thall reape fuch profite, as will either quench his flames, or allwage his furie, either caufe him to renounce his Lady as most pernicious, or rederne his libertie as most viecious. Come therefore to me all ve Louers that have beene Deceined by fancie, the glaffe of peffiletice: or delived by Tolo men, the gate of perdition : be as earned to feeke a medicine, as you were eager to run into mischiefe; the earth bringeth forth as well Endine to belight the people, as Demlock to enbanger the patient, as well the Role to Diffill, as the Bettle to fling, as well the Berto give Bonny, as the Spider to yeslo porton. If my lembe life Bentlemen, haue ginen von offence, let my coults faile make you amends, if by my felly any be allured to luft let them by my repentance bee bratone to continencie. Achilles freare could as well heale as burt, the secorpton, though hee thing, pet he trints the paine, though the heliche Neins popler the theene, velitable remedy to man agantil poylon, though i have infected forme by example, yet I hope I hall comfort mas ny by repentance . Daniel . . . . to to announce

Mhattoener 3 speake to men, the same also 3 speake to women, 3 modice not to runne with the Pare; and hold both the Honno, to carry fire in the one hand e water in the other, ney ther to flatter men as altogether saultlesse, neither to fall out with women, as altogether guiltie, so, as 3 animot minued to picke a thanke with the one, so and 3 not vetermined to picke a quarrell with the other, if women be not peruscle, they shall reape profit by remedy of pleasure. If Phillis were now to take counsaile, the would not be so swith to hang her selfe, merther Dido so sono to die so. Aneas, neither Pasiphae so monstrous to love a Bull, nor Phædra so unnaturall to be enamoured so love her sonne. This is therefore to aumonicall young sinces

13 3

and Poniles in lone, not to blow the coales of lancy with believe, but to quench them with viloaine. Then lane tickleth thee, decline it leak it kide thee, rather fall then furfet, rather flarus then firine to exceed. Though the beginning of lone bying actight, the end bringeth believation. Ho, as the first draught of Thine with comfort the same the first branght of the third furne into the bead; so the first sip of lone is pleasant.

the fecond perrillous, the third peffilent.

If thou perceive the felfe to bee enticed with they wanten glaunces, oz allured with their wicked guiles, either enchamp teb with their beautie, or enamored with their branerie, enter with the felfe into this meditation. Wabat that I gaine if I cho taine my purpole inay rather what that I lofe in winning my pleafure ? If my Laby yeeld to be my Loner, is it not likely the will be anothers lemman and if the bea model Watron; my labor is loft. This therfore remaineth, that either I muft vine in cares, a perrith with curies. If thee be chafte, then is thes cop, if light, then is thee impubent, if a grave Matron, tobo can wood ber : if a lelob minion, who would web her : if one of the Veltall birgings they have bowed hir minities if one of Venas court they have before differentice : if Allow one that is favie it will kindle tealoufie : if one that is foule at will connect mes into frensie. Affertile to beare children, mp care to inchenfen.if barren, my courle is augmented : if boneft, I feare ber beathaif inmoned Thall be wearie of my life.

To what enother half I line in love, seing allowing it is a life ware to ber feared that beat by fact all my fine water in agree and ware in love, to all my freature spent on letvels, and spent in islice, what recompence shalf I reape before repentance? what other reward shalf have then repach? what other solare, then end offe shame? Withhappity thou will say, if I refuse they courtedle, I shall be accounted a merocke, a wilk say, taunsed and retained with intollerable gles. Alasie fono scole, are thou so pinned to their seurs, that thou regardes more their babble then thine given buils? more their frames then thine given weld.

fare ?

Sitt.

#### Euphues to Pladuorus.

fare: Will thou refemble the kinde Spantell, indich the maze be is beaten, the fancet he is: whe faill direct indich theill mener away ? Don't then not knowe, that discover being none baltant, where e be be too bentrous; that they account one a day fare if he be not desperate, a pinch peny, if he be not desperated if filent, a fat, if full of words; a foolg, phernerly, not they also waies thinks of their Louers, and talks of their from they indiging all to be Clownes which are not Courters, and all to be pinglers that be not courfers. Seeing therfore the very homome of lane is source, the bur cannot be successfully the loue is source, the bur cannot be successfully banger, least untimely thou run into a thousand perils. Seatch the wound while it is greene, to late comment the salue when the source festereth, and the incounce bringeth double care, when the malable is past cure.

Beware of Belaies, What leffethen the graine of Souffard fiebe, in time almost what thing is greater then the stalk there ofe Mieflender tinin groweth tog Rately tree, and that which with the hand might easily hand being pulled too, will barolie with the Are be bewen bowne. The leaft farke if it beenot evenched will bort into affante, the leaft Month in time eateth the thickeft cloth and I have read, that in a foot frace? there mas a Towneth Spaine bedermined with Counies . in Theffalia with Boules, with From in France in Africa inith flives. Af thefe fillie mormes in tract of times ouerthrefe to frately Townes, how much more will lone, which creevell feeretly into the minde, (as the rull both into the roon, and is not perceived) confirme the hopy, yea and confounds the foule! Diefer not from howe to day from day to month, from month to viere, and alivaies remaine in milery, De that to bay is not milling will to morrow be more milfull. But alas it is more common then lamentable, to be hold the tottering effate of it or ners, who think by delayes to prepent Dangers, with Dyle to auenth fire with amoaks to clare the eperlight a ficher flatter themselves with a fainting farewell, deferring oper butill to morpow, when an their morrow both alimates increase the fortow. Let neithen their amiable countenaunce, neitherthey? painteb

sahnen bedeutiding in etther their Deceffull promifes allure theers willies. Whithe this with the felfe, that the fleat fonce of Calpologuere Cubrile friares to entile Villes, that the Crab then catcheth the Doller when the funne thineth; that Hyena when the Mosketh like a man bewifeth mell mischiefe that mos mien whe ther be most pleafant, pretend most misc biefe. Folding Alexander which bearing the commendation a finanter comtines of p wife of Danies, to conventionly withfood the affanits of fancis, that be would not fo much as take a vieto of her beans tie amirate Ovrula king endued with fact continencie, that he louthen to to the point the bigio of Panches and tober Arafpus told binutbat the verelles all mortall winhts in aintable them. by formuchthe most fair Cyrus, Tought to refraine from bett fight, for if I follow thy counfaile in going to ber, it may bee ! half velice to continue with her, and by my light affection new lecting ferious affairs. Denrie of Romalus to abitaine from thinesbe it nover to beticate , of Ageliaus to befolle colle ape parrell, but never focurious : of Diogenes to betell Commen. totthe fire be bewen tottene. Abe lailmood range with a

De that toucheth Ditch, thalt be beffled , the fore eve infece teth the found, the forietie with women, becaute feruritie in the fonle and makethall the tences, fencelette ! Boreover, take this countails as an Article of the Crew, which I meane tofol tow as the chiefe aroment of my faith, that inlines is the one ly nurte a nourither of fentuall appetite, the fole maintenance of poutbly affection; the first that that Cubide theoteth in the hote lingfofa beolette Loner . Thoulo to Goo There not as ble to timothis for a truth by mine stone triall, and I focula the example of others idignes hab caused mee rather to anopoe that fault, then experience of mine abme folly. Bothe biffotute bane I beene in Arming against good counsaile e home resolute in Manbing in mine outre conceit a boto forward to wickebucife a hold from the to interpret those aparton south the much corkee ring boto toavivaro in heartha correction & stricter was much valike there Abbig fabbers in my life framabl fares time like them in beleete) who taboured till they were cold, cate till Daimied. thep

they fluent, and lay in ber till they bones aleb. Decrof come meth it Dentlemen, that love crepeth into the minbe by printe traft, and keepeth his hold by maine courage. The man being tole, the minde is apt to all uncleannes : the mind being boyoe of exercise, the man is boide of honestie . Doth not the ruff fret the barbell your if it be not bles. Doth northe Boath eate the finell garment if if be not wagne ? Doth not molle grow on the frothell Rone, if it be not Airred! Doth not implette infed the wifelt wit, if it be ginen to iblenede ? Is nor the Cambing was ter looner frozon then the running Areame? 30 not ge that fit teth, more inbied to liep then be that walketh ! Doth flot chird mon experience make this common unto be, that the fatfelt ground beingeth forth nothing but weeden if it be not well the led that the Charpet wit inclineth onely to withtones if if be not eperaled - 30 it not true which Serioca reporteth that as too much bending breaketh the bow, to too much remitted food ett the mino. Beffdesthis, timmoverate flape, iminobel play on. fatiable fivilling of withe, both to weathen the fenery and be witch the foule, that before we feele the motion of love, he are off theprefumptions, to face think obine foul refolued to luft!

of Cleque tolenes my Philaires, is mair then eatily bellend the bome, and quenty the boands of Capide. Lone gines place to labour, labour and thou thalt never lone ! Cupide is a craftie childe, following those at an inch that Antie pleature, and the ing those (wiftly that take values. Benothy minute to the law inhereby thou mail have under ambing of orbe and addition entionies, befeind the Clients, enrichthy Coners, and carrie crevite in the Countrie. If Lawe ferme louthfome bille ther fearch the fecrets of Whillick, whereby then mails know the bits ben tinting of bearbs, whereby thou mailt gather profif to the purle, and pleasure to thy minue. With bur can be more requitire to bansane affaired, their fi) enerte femuet be if nemerto not no over phallis be it mener lo cole, to every infestion be it never lo Brange, to give a remedie? The alae berte Handeth as per in birotocherene i That Gallen gittete guos , fulliman bononts. Arthon by to wick strate the called the way by billie the Denante of Philick. chely

Bhilishes or to bumiles that thou will not beate thy braines a bout the inditute of the haw, confer all the fructe, all the time, all the treature to the attaining of the facred and fincere know leage of Diminitie. By this praid thou bride thine incentinencie, raine thy affertions, refinging the luft. Dere halt thou basolo ag it inercina glafferthat all the glozy of man is as the grade, that all things under beauen are but baine, that our life is but a habow, a warfire, a pilgrimage, a vapour, a bubble, a blaft : of fuch thortnes, that Danie faith, it is but a spanne long, of fuch tharpnes, that lob patethat replevifued with many mis feries; of fuch bacertainties that woo arono fooner borns, but we are subject to death the one foote no fooner on the grounder but the other readic to flip into the grave. Bere Galt theu find eals for the burthen of finne, comfort for the confcience pined with panitie, mercie for thine offences, by the marty bome of much benoing breakert the bows, fo too much remainering ad .... De this thou walt be able to intrust those that be weake, to confute those that be obtainates to confounde those that be error nious, to confirme the faithfull to comfort the desperat to cutte of the prefumptious, to faue thine owne foule bythp fure faith, and ediffe the barts of many by the fourt begrine, af this forme to Araight a piet for the firance difeate pato helps profession to lo hollow a perion, then imploy the felfe to martiall fraces to inita, to tunneis, yea, to all townents, rather then to leyter in loue, and wend the life in the lang of Labies, for hat more mone Grous canthered s, then to be a young man abula the learing to his owne thanse, which Capit both much him to his oline preferment - author greater infames, then to content by theres ping of their Labics, to the bains delighis offancie to all hinne of pices as it more against amo and control natured die it not follie to theme wit to moment, which are neither able not have ling to receive fruite thereof. Dolt thou and known that the tre Silvacende, beareth no fruit im Phoro a that the Perlian tres in Rhades, downely ware group, but never bring fastbapple that Amonius and Mardin initional y growin India ballaming onely Dhillich.

#### Euphlies Ito Philameis.

30

H

B

6

A

B

Ö

9.0

2

91

財務

£

A

ometpin Siria that in Rhodes no Canle in Arbeitor ber hans ab Dwle live in Creek, no wit wing in the will of wonten ? Charle tiffe therefore thy affections, and force wor nature adduct nature to frine in white. Bob into the Tountry loke to the nounters. postie thing Deer, follow the appropriate arms of perces and follow the Cattell; and benice with the lete both the land earl of theilt may increase the exofit wir Autuministrill fight Auste to Sal mer vile the barueff, in the Sobing triurthe Garden, in toling fer thy Totals, and thus beginning to oblight to best abou 1960 band, thou that be mine to other to be inclose with an able but when productively the first the state with the state of t pleasure that have no some bedefile the artifice with travel pos honest recreation after the tople, ofe hunting or himselines we ther rouse the Deare, or impourt the Abecant in the thou roote out the remembrance of the former tone, and repent the Lay before thine eyes, the flights and ber cite infilial look traile and although the Chart bart binde thereby sath allowed to holde a candle at her thanie, and touffer the benefice think with bellruction, vergoe, runne, ale into the Country, west her water thou thy plants in that thou departed from the Dieges nie meither fran piri amangmeitheanthetherit of best to bevart or not: but by how inner the montition aut willing to about the much the more halten thy theps: neither faine for the felfeland develoffe excule tohereby thou mail tarry I potitier lot awith hos thunder, neither lightning him tember flas the ionical and recken not with the felfe both indiapolities 1900 hall wait, what theweth intarines, but how minus from bill to wit , that Dis cureth manlineffe. But folish and fraidi ke Avorts will veride my precepts harde, and effeeme my perfenalisms haggard ? must of force confesse, that it is a corration to the Comacks of a Louer, but aromfort to a good y liner ob your through a thousand pikes; to escape terme thousand bereited women potions billing found braith, tharpe purgations miake thost withus , rand but Medicine the moze bitter it is othermode betterit in im widit ing. To bealethe body we try philicked fearth tuminglandot forceries benetite through fire and direct, leaving nothing with reaffeb. Cought.

fauabichet may be gotten for mony, be it never fo much, or prosuced by any meanes, be they never fo bulatofull. Home much mote ought wee to basard all things for the fafegard of minde. and quiet of confcience : And certes, eafter will the remedy be luben the reason is espied; bo you not knowe the nature of ino men, which is grounded onely bom extremities ? Doe they thinke any man to belight them, bnieffe be boate on them ? A np to be ferwent in case be be not furious ? If be be cleanly, then tearme they him proude, if means in apparrell, a flower, if tall, alunges, if thost a biparfe, if bold, blunt sif thamefalt, a coin ATE : infomuch as they have neither meane in their framps, not measure in their folly. Abut at the first the Dre weileth not the poake, not the Golt the maffle, not the Lover his counfell, yet time causeth the one to bende his necke, the other to open his mouth, and focult enforce the third to reald his right to reafon. Lay before thine eyes, the flights and beceits of thy Labie, her Gratching in iell, and Reeping in earnest, her periorie, her impietie, the countenaunce the the weth to thee of courfe, the lout the hear of to others of scale, her open malice, her biffembled sin that then bewetett from the abilians

D. I morde in reventing of their birenthou coulbell beas er Inquent, as in himme being them then oughteft to be penitent: be the never fa comity, call ber counterfaite, bee thre never fo Araight thinks her crokes, and inseff all parts of her bobie to the warff, be the never to westhy. If the be well fet, then call her a Bollegif lauben a Dafilithoin tif Rut browne, as black as a coate, if well entoured a painted spall. if thee be rienfant, then is the a wanton, if fullen; actourse ! if honefithen is the coy of improcent, a parlot bearch every baine and fineties of their dificultion, if thee bauena fight in befeant . befire ber to chauntit : if no comming to bannet, requell herte trip it : if no fhill be Bolick proffer berithe lante, if an itt gate, then watte swith her, if note in freich falke with her zif the be gan toothed. tell ber fomemerry ieft to make ber laugh if pinke eyeb, fome Doleful hillary to cause her weeve : in the one, ber grinning wil thein ber beformed, in the other, ber fubining like a Wig halfe faucht, reafteb.

realted. It is a worlde to be howe commonly wee are blimbed with the collusions of women, and more intired by theyromas ments beeing artificiall, then their proportion being naturall. I loath almost to thinke on their orntments, and Apothicarie drugs, the liking of their faces, e all their slibbersauces, which bring quealines to the stomach, and dispoint to the mind. Lake from them their periwigs, their paintings, their teinels, theyrolles, their boulderings, and thou shalt some perceive, that a woman is the least part of herselse. When they be once robbed of their roades, the will they appeare so obious, so bylie, so mone strous, that show will rather thinke the Serpents then Saints; and so like haggs, that thou will scare rather to be enchanned then enamoured.

Looke in their Closets, and there thait thou find an Apothicaries hoppe of flueet confections, a Surgions bore of funday falues, a Bedlers pack of nein fangles. Befides all this, they hadowes, their foots, their lawnes, their lefekies, their ruffs, their rinus, their them rather Carbinalls Curtifans, then mobelt Patrons, and reore carnally affected then mooned in con-Ccience. If every one of thefe things feverally be not of force to move thee, yet all of them joyntly thould mallifie the: Bazes ouer, to make thee the firmeer to firme against these byzens, and more subtill to beceive these tame wervents, my counsails is, that thou have moze firings to thy both then one : it is fafe riding at two Ankers, a fire denided in twaine, burneth flower, a formtaine running into many rivers, is of lefte force, the mind enamoured of two women, is lefte affected with velice, and lefte infected with befraire : one love expelleth another, and the res membrance of the later, quencheth the concupileence of the firft.

Pet if thou be to weake, being be witched with their wiles, that thou half neither will to sichne, not wife to anothe they sompany, if than be either to wicked, that thou will hot, or to webbed, that thou canst not abstains from their glaunces, yet at the least distemble thy griefe. If thou be as hote as the spount Arps, saine the follows color as the bill Caucalus, carrie tipe

faces

dilloca

2 020

much

inde.

op be

fino

they

R :

Den

tall.

comi

1101

t the

, pet

bis

fort.

ber

im

out

bleb

Sti

mt:

r fo

e fo

call

ack

mt.

bes

d s

rto

HB

in

eD.

310

ift

D.

faces in one hoover rouge the flaming fancie with fained aftes. thew the felfe found when thou are rotten, let the hiele be niers rie, when the bart is mellanchollie, beare a pleafant counter names with a pines confrience a vainted theath with a leaden namer. Thus diffemblininthy artefe thou mail recure the bil cale : love exceptth in by frealth, and by fealth flibeth away. If the breaks promife with thee in the might, of ablent herfelfe in the pay ferme thou carele fe and then will the be carefull if then languishe then will the belauth of her honour, yea, and of the other fratige beaff, her honeftie, Stanbe thou on thy pantuffles, and the will vaile bonnet. Lie thom a loofe and thee will cease on the luter if thou valle by her book, who be called backe, either feeme thou beafe and do not beare, or beforete and not to care. Miethe place, the parlers, the postals; wherein thou haft been conversant with thy Lavie, pen Philadeus, Channe the threat where Lucilla both pipell leaft the fight of her windows renne the funnie of the forom in more in the simulation and

Bet although I would have thee precife inthieping thefe precents, yet mould a haue thee to approp folitarines that breebes mellancholie: mellancholie, mabneffe : madneffe, mifebiefe. and offer befolation : have ever forme faithfull plicere with who thou mailt communicate the countails, forme Pilades to entone race Oreftes, Come Damon to releafe Pichias, forme Scipio to res cure Lalius. Phillis in wanteing the weets, hanged herfelfe. Afiarchus forfaking companie, fooiled bimfelfe with his owne Bookin, Bigros a Koman, more wife then fortunate, beethe a lone befroich himfelfe with a pothard. Beware of felitarines. But although I would have thee we conveny for the recreative on; per woulde a bane the alwairs to teaue the companie of those that accompany thy Lavie : yea, if the have any iewell of thine in her culloby, rather leads it the ho foot a death in Celsing to recover a tride, thou renue thine old trouble . 150 not enrious to curbathy hairesmos careful to be neute in thy appar relibe not produced of the gold nor verife in the writter be not like & Entilifunan, which preferreth enery firange falblow before the ble of his Country. Ber thou pissolntes least this Luby this ky the faces FIF fooliff

foolish in framing thy selfe to every fashion for her sake. We leve not their oather and solemne protostations, their exorcismes a continuations, their teares which they have at commann dement, their alluring lookes, their treating on the toe; their businessetopes.

Extensive one loath his Ladie, and bee alkamed to bee her fernaunt. It is rithes and eale that nourisheth affection, it is play. Thine, and wantonnesse that feedeth a Louer as fatte as a foole; reframe from all such meates an shall provide thine as petite to lust, and all such means as may allore the minus to folly. Take cleere water for strong white, brotons Pread for since Panchet, Bafe and Brewis for Lusies and Partrioger for ease, labour; for pleasure, paine; for unfetting, hunger for sace, labour; for the felowship of Ladies, the companie of Philosophers.

10 Mithon fap to me. Philition beale the felfer Taunffver that Tammetly well purged of that difeate, and pet I was neiter more willing to care my felfethen to comfort my Friends. And feeing the cause that made in mee to colbe in Devotion. thould make in thee also as frozen a delired hope thou wilt be agready to provide a falue, as then wall ballie in firkting a foreg And get Philaupy A ipoulagnet that all Women fhoulde talle Depper in the mole, in that I have Disclosed the leder bemaines of a felus for fuell & knows none will winch except the be canled neither any be offended boileffe thee be quittie? Therefose A earneallie petice thee, that thou theme this colling Carbe to none, except thou the we also my Defence to their all : For als though I wate nothing the ill will of light buffwines net frout. I be loth to loofe the good will of honel Batrons . Thus been ing readie to goe to Athens, and readie; there to entertains thee, when seemen thousbalt repairs thether: Thione thee fares the fignoing pubble and the cunning dramamples ail annalled

greet rans said The the Rhamant and the Demmite, pet both dissurdque great office from to be put be wante Vierum and the Chanail, pet both classe; great contrariefic between Lass and io This, pet 1 orbit amen.

To the grave Matrons and honest maydens of Italie.

Entlewomen, because I would neither be misse, ken of purpose, neither misconstruet of mallice, least exther the simple spould suspen mee of folly, so the subtile condemne me of blasphemie against the noble sere of women, I thought good that this

my faith fhould be fet botone to find fauour with the one, and to confiste the capils of the other. Beleeue me Bentlemomen, ale though I have been bold to invetabacainft many, vet I am not to boutifb to enuie them all, though I feeme not to gamefome as Ariftippus to play with Lais, yet am I not fo booned as Diogenes, to abhore all Lavies, weither mould a von though think me fo foolish ( although of late & baue beene bery fantasticall ) that for the light behaviour of a fewe. I thoulve call in queftion the bemeanour of all. I knowe that as there bath beine an brie chaft Helenin Greece; fothere bath ban alfon chaft Penclope. as there bath been a provintions Paliphae, fo there bath beene a coult Theories though many have better to be belough as lupier loued Alemenal get fonte bate withen to ber intipaced, as Phrigius embeaced Piers, as there bath raignes a wiches lezal bell, to hath there ruled a benout Debora, though many bane ben an fichte an Lucilla, vet bath there beene many as faithfull as Lucrecia. Withatibenertherfore Thane fookeriof the folier as gain the flights and firstillies of women. I hove there is none wil willike it if the be bonell; neither care Til any ow, if the be an bariot. The lower Crabbath the thew ofan apple, as well as the floret 18 inpen, the black Ranen the Chape of a bird affect! as the jubite & wan, the lewbe wight the name of a woman, as inell nathe handl apatron. There is great bifrerence bermane the flanding puble and the running freame? per both water great onde betinene the Abamant and the Bommice, pet both Sones : a great biffination to be put betweene Virrum and the Chaiffall, get both glaffe : great contrarietie between Lais and Laicretia, pet both women.

and Coming therefore one may lone the claire Combuit feater. though he loath the mubbie Ditch, and weare the vectous Di amond, though he befpile the ragged brick . Ithinke one may also with fafe conficience reverence the modell fere of honest maibens, though be forfineare the lewo fort of unchall minions. Wisfes though be detelled Caliplo with her fugred boite, vet he imbraced Penelope with her rube biffaffe. Though furbues abborre the beautie of Lincilla, pet will be not abfraine from the company of a grave major a Though the teares of the Part be falt, pet the teares of the More be fwet : though the teares of fome women be counterfait to deceine , pet the teares of mamy be current to trie their lone. I for my part will honour those alwayes that be honelby and worthin thour motife, whom Thall know to be worthie in their lyuing: neither can T promife fuch preciseneffe. that A thali never be ranaht agains with the baite of beautie : for although the falthon of Lucilla haue caused me to forsake my wonted botage, get the faith of some Lady may cause me once againe to fall into mine olde bifeale: For as the fire Rone in Lyguria, though it be quenched with milk, yet againe is kindled with water, or the rots of Anchula, though it be haroned with water, yet againe it is made foft with Dyle, fo the hart of Euphues inflamed earft with loue, although it be coled with the Deceits of Lucilla, pet will it againe flame with the loyaltie of fome honeft Laby, and although it be hardes ned with the water of wilinelle, yet will it be molitied with the Dyle of wifebome.

I presume therefore so much open the discretion of you Dentlewomen, that you will not thinke the worse of me, in that I have thought so ill of some women; or love mee the worse, in that I loath some so much. Hortisis my faith, that some one Kose will be blatted in the bod, some other never fall from the stalke; that the Dake will some becaten with the worme, the Walnut tree never: that some women will easilie be enticed to follie, some other never allured to banitie: You ought therefore no more to bee agreeved with that which I have land, then the Bint Paister to se the Corner banged, or the

P.

# Euphues and his Epheebus.

true Bubienthe falle Traitor araignes, at the hanes man the there concemnes. And fo farewell.

Von have heard (Bentlemen) bowe some the hotte betire of Euphues was turned into a colde benotion, not that fancie tanled him to change, but that the ficklenes of Lucilla enforced him to alter his mind. Bauing therfore vetermined with bine felfe never againe to be entangled with fuch fond belights, are tording to the appointment made with Philaurus, he immede atly repaired to Athens, there to follow his owne valuate fluore and calling to mind his former lofenes, and how in his youth he had milpent his time, be thought to give a causat to all Bai rents how they might bring up their chiltren in bertue, and a commanwement to all youth, howe they Gould frame them. felnes to their fathers infirmations & in whichis plainly to be fent, what wit can and wil on if if be well emploied, which bif courte followeth : although it bying leffe pleafure to your youth full minos, then his first discourte, yet will it bying more profit: in the one being contained the race of a Louer, in the other the reatons of a Bhilofopher.

# Euphues to his Ephæbus.

T is commonly layb, pet doe I thinke it a common lie, that Experience is the millrede of foles, too in my opinion they be most soles that want it. Reother am I one of the least that have tryed this true, neither he only that have to sog this true, neither he only that have to sog this strue, neither he only that have to sog the least this true, neither he only that have to sog the least this true, neither he only that have to so the least this true, neither he only that have to so the least this true, neither he only that have to so the least this true, neither he only that he recommon had been dead to so the least this true, neither he only that he recommon had been dead to so the least the head to so the least this true, neither he only that he recommon had been dead to so the least that he was the least this true, neither he only that he recommon had been dead to so the least that he was the least this thinke the common had been dead to so the least that he was the least thinke the least the least thinke the least the least thinke the least the least thinke 
it to be false. I have beene here a souveent of great wealth, of tome wit, of no small acquaintance, yet have I learned that by experience, that I have haroly have seene by learning. I have throughly lifted the disposition of goods, where in, I have found made bean then meals, more bown than leaven, more rage, then reason. He that hath been burned, knoweth the succe of the fire, he that hath been turned, remaindath the smart of the Goodpion,

## Euphues and his Ephoebus.

be that both endured the bounts of fancie, knoweth best how to eschus the broyles of affection. Let therefore my countaite be of such authoritie, as it may command you to be sober, your conversation of such integritie, as it may encourage me to goe forward in that solich I have taken in hand; the whole effect that he to set downe, a young man so absolute, as that nothing may be added to his suffer perfection. And although Place both hem so curious in his Common weals. Anthoris so precise in his bappie man, Tully so pure in his Drator, that we may well wish to set them, but never have any hope to inivo them, yet thall my young Impe besuch a one, as shall be perfect enery way, and yet common, if billigence and industrie be employed to the attayning of such perfection. But I could not have young men slowe to follow my precepts, or ide, to befor the time, like Saint George, who is ever on horseback, yet never riveth.

If my countails thall feene rigorous to Kathers; to instruct their children, or beaute for youth to follow their Parents will; let them both remember that the Estrings disgelieth hardyren to preserve his health, that the Souldier lieth in his hardness to aschine conquest, that the sicke Patient spolloweth history Pils to be eased of his griefs, that youth should indure that pe

Romes to find reliefe.

I my felfe had been bappie, if I had been bufortunate, weals thie, if left meanly, better learned; if I had been better fined : Wile have an olde (Adonerhe) pouth will have his courfe. Ab Gentlemen, it is a course which we quant to make course as count of , replenithed with more miferies then olde age, with more finnes then common cut-throats, with more calamities then the pate of Priamus: the are no foner out of the feet, but we refemble the Cocix, which beltrogeth her felle through felfo will, or the Wellican, which pearcetha wound in her stone breath: we are either led with a baine glozy of cur brover verfonage, or with felfe lone of our owne capacitie, cither entans aled with beautie, or feduced by tole patimes, epther witcht with vitious company of others, or inveigled with curewne conceits : of all thefe things I may the bolber fpeake, bauing 99 2 trped

# Euphues and his Ephæbus.

tryed if true to mine other trouble. To the intent therefore that all young Gentlemen might thank my former tolenette, I have let it downe, and that all might follow my future lyis. I meane here to their what Fathers Hould doo, what children thould follow, descring them both not to reiect it, because it protected from one which hath because itso, no more then it they would neglect the gold because it tresplistiff don't early of the pure wine, for that it comments will be of a homelie press, of the precious stone Aleres, which is found in the filthy next of the Cagle, or the precious some Tradonices, that is ever taken out of the head of the poyloned Dragon. But to our purpose.

# That the childe betrue borne, ming and offoll

First, touching the procreation . it shall ferme necessarie to intreate of : tubofocuer be be that Defireth to be the fire of an banne Sonne, or the gather of a fortunate chilo, let all risimabiliaine from those women, which be epther baft Ef birth, abbare of bonettie: for if the Souther be noted of incontineucle, authe father of bice, the child will either buring life be infected with the like crime, or the trecheries of the Warents anianomie to bim will be caff in his feeth: For we commonly sall those buhappie children, which bane lyzong from buhonell Darents . It is therfore a great treafare to the father . and tranguilitie to the mind of the child, to have that libertie which bothnature, Lawe, and reason bath fet botone . The quiltie conficience of a father that hath troben away, cantett him to thinke and fulped that his father also went not right? wherby his owner behaviour is as it were a witnesse of his owne bale nelle : euen as thole that come of a novie probente Ball oftheir gentrie : Dere open it came, that Diophantus Themofocles bis Son, wouldoften and that openly fay in a great multitube, that what foener he hould feeme to requell of the Athenians, be thould be fure also to obtaine, for fayth bee, white foener 3 will, that will my Wother, and that my Wother fayth, my Pather

#### · Euphoes and his Ephoebus.

Sather socheth, and what my sather ventrety, that the Achemians will grannt mour willingly. The bold concage of the Lacedemonians is to be prayled, thistipset a sind on the head of Archidamus their king, southat he had married a mountmost a small personage, saying he minoco to get Duienes, noo kings of melione him. Let us did omit that this choic same show were wont precisely to kings, that not make their disches he sober oppoints little wine; that house hour mains deeple he sober oppoints little wine; that house hour though the short and outcast opiliones, for that the san of the pather bound be shown in outcast opiliones. Diogenes thereford seeing a young man optic onersome with drinks, or because of his witter, or you with a lond toget a Pointh, youth, thou had an aimakin pather value thus much sorphoreaston amount how the legisthants betted to a will show the brieflie.

T How the lyfe of a young niam should 44.

fallen for want of wantling. Worecurr

Bere are theethings which taufe berfemion aramans pature, Meafon, Mile . Meafon 3 call Difeiplire, Cife. Crercile : if any one of thele branches want, certainly the tree of Clertue muft needs wither . For patine with out Discipline is of small force, and Discipline without Rature more feeble : if evercife or thatie be bopoe ofanwof thefe die de waiteth anthing. For as in tilling of the ground and his vander there is first chosen a fertile foile, then a cunning former, there god febe : even fo muft we compare Patiere to the fat Carth. the expert hufbandman to the Scholemainer, the faculties and friences to the purefaces. If this oper had not been in our wier Decements, Pyrhagoras, Socrates, Plato, and wholever was renotonies in Greece: for the glory of wilebome, they had never been efornised for toile-men , neither canonised as if were for Saints, among thole that Audie Sciences. It is therefoze & molt enident ficure of Gods finguler faucur towards bun that is indued with all thefe qualities, without the which, manie mod milerable . But iftbere be any one that thinketh wit not neceffarie

## Euphues and his Ephoebus.

necessarie to the obtaining of wisedome, after he hath gotten the way to Mertue by invulrie and exercise, he is an Veretike, in my opinion touching the true faith of learning, so, if Pature play not her part, in paine is labour, and as it is sayd before, if thusis he not employed, in vaine is Pature. Soloth turneth the eage of witte, to the thereth mot the mind, a thing he it never to easie in hard to the idle, a thing he it never so hard is calle to the wit well-employed. And most plainty we may so in many things the essence of industrie and labour, it is a selected in many things the essence of industrie and labour, it is a selected to the with well-employed.

The little props of raine peirce the bard Barble, Bren with often bandling is worne to nothing. Abelides this, Industrie the wetisher felte in other things, the fertile loyle if it be neuer title port iper barnen, and that which is most noble be nature is made molt vile by negligence, what tre if it be not topped beareth any fruite ? What Wine if it be not proyned, bringeth forth Grapes : 38 not the Brength ofthe boog furned to weath neffe with to much belicacy ! were not Milo his armes brawn. fallen for want of waafling . Dozeoner , by labour the fierce Unicome is tamed the wilded Haulton is reclaimed the great tell Bulmarke is facket. It was well gunfinered of that man of Theffalie, who being bemannord who among the Theffalians were reputed most vile, those faib be, that line at quiet and cafe, never gining themselves to martiall affaires; but inhat ficult one ble many words in a thing alreadie promet. It is in fome; ple, and epercife, that brings a rong man to bertue, and bertue there is first electing fortile feile, their a confrimmination aid at

Lycurgus the Laive giver of the Sparrans viv nourish two will elps, both of one fire and one barn, but after a sunvey manuer, so, the one beframed to hunt, and the other to by altunies in the chimnies ende at the Pooredge Pot, after ward willing the Lacedemonians into one assemblie, he says: An etwartening of Tiertue, ye Lacedemonians. Education, and survey, and Exercise, is the most noblest meaners, the truth of which it will make manifest onto you by tryall, then bringing south the which will whether, and setting or wine there a Pot and a pare, the will ranne at the Pare, and the other at the Pourcose Potte the

# Euphues and his Ephoebus.

Lacedemonians fearer biverstanding this millerte, the layour moth of these be of one fire and one damnie, this you se power boucation altereth pature.

# T Of the Education of youth.

I is most necessarie and most natural in mine opinion, that the Pother of the child be also the pairs, both to the entire love the beareth to the babe, and the great better the bath to have it well nourished: for is there any one more mate to bring up the Insant, that thee that body the Dr will any be so carefull for it, as the that bred it? For as the threbs and throws in Child-birth wrought her pairs: so the incling countenance of the Insant increaseth her pleasure. The hired purse is not white to the hired Sermant, which not so; good will, but gaine, not so, the lone of the man, but so, the desire of the maney, accomplished his dayes twoke.

Movemer , Rature in this point enforceth the Souther to murle ber owne child, which bath quien unto enery Beatt milk to fuccour her owne, and me thinketh Cature to be a molt beauibent forfer and prouter for the fame, which bath ainen fo a womant two papps, that if thee could conceine two, the might have wher swith also to nourth twaine, and that by flicking of the Mothers breatt there might be a greater loue, both of the Potter towards the chile, and the chile towards the Wother. which is bery likely to come to paffe, for we for contimonly thois that eate and britis and live together, to be more seafens one to the other, then those that make albome, is not the name of a Mother more floor ? If it be, toby is halfe that Title beffored on a woman ! Indich never felt the paines in concerning, nepther can concede the like pleasure in nourishing, as the Dother north! Is the Carth called the Bother of all things, onely because in player faity ? 1900, but because it nouritheth those things that fpring out of it , lobatfoeuer is breb in the fen. is: Bointhe Dea, no plant, no tre, no bearde commeth out of the Galagiani ground:

# Euphues and his Ephothus.

ground that is not writtened, and no it were nurled of the motture and willian the earths the kinnelle nurleth her tableless the Rauen cheritheth her birds, the Wiper her brode, and that

a moman call away her Mabe?

A account it call away. which in the finathe cloutes is caff afine, and little care can the Bother haue. which can fuffer fuch crueltie. And can it be tearmed with any other tytle then crue slite, the Infant petimbing red of the Wether, the Pother pit breathing through the terments of her travaile, the childer ing for helpe , which is faye to mone with Beatls , quen in the felfe faid moment it is borne, or the next minute, to beliver it to a frange Qurie, which perhaps is neither wholfome in body neither hanelt in manners wwhich elfounth moze thy argent. although a trille, then thy tender Infant, thy greateff treafure? Me it not necellarie and requilite, that the Babe be nurled with that frue accultoned inice, and therifled with his wonted heat. and not fee with counterfaits best & Wheate theolone into a Brange ground, turneth to a contrarie graine, the Wine tran-Catebinto amother loyle changeth his kind . A flip pulled from the falke withereth, the young childe as it were dipped from the pans of the Bother, either changeth bis fature, og altereth his bisvolition. It is partilp fapt of Horace. A new beffell will long time fauour of that lignour, that is first poured infoit, and the Infant will ener frell of the Aurfenmanners baning to feb ofher milke. others beent there inight bearing

Thereforelet the spother as aften as he hall behold their two fountaines of milke, as it were of their owne according with liquour, remember that their admorphism and fivelling with liquour, remember that their admorphism of their formal that their admorphism of their formal that the water of their with what for that naw begin to tattle and call her Pannum haith what fore can the beare it of his mouth, anto indomithe bath denier pannum e. It is not milke onely that increately the through a angrementeth the body with the child, for another hand accuration modifier that before it received in the bowels, by the which the tender pairs were bound and uniterogether, by the which it increates

#### Euphues and his Ephœbus.

increased and was faccoured in the body. Certes 7 am of thet mind, that the wit and disposition is aftered and changed by the milke, as the maiffure and fap of the Carth both change the Bature of that tre oz plant that it nourifheth . Wherefore the common by word of the common people, fameth to be ground bed buon god experience, which is : The Fellowe bath fucked milchiefe even from the teat of his Burle : The Crecians when they fain any one fluttifly fed, they would fay even as Burfes. whereby they noted the great dillyking they bad of their fulsome feeting. The Etimologie of Wother among the Grecians. may aptly be applied to those Bothers which binnaturally beale with their children, they call it Meter a Meterine, that is, sonther, of not making much of, or of not nourithing. Derreof it commeth, that the Sonne both not with verpe belire lone bis Dother, neither with butie obey ber, his naturall affection bes ing as it were beuided, and biffraught into twaine, a Mother and a Burie : Dereofit procedeth, that the Bother beareth but a cold kindnes towards her child, when the thall fee the the ture of the Burle in the nurture of the chilo. The chiefelt way to learning is, if there be a mutuall love and fervent befire, bed twene the teacher and him that is taught, then berily the great teft furtherance to Concation is, if the mother nouriff the chilo. and the child fuck the Mother, that there be as it were a relativ on and recipzocall order of affection.

Pet if the Pother either for the enill habite of her body, or the weaknesse of her paps, cannot though the would nurse the Infant, then let her prouide such a one, as thall be of god complexion, honest condition, carefull to tender the child, letting to the well to it; willing to take paines, dilligent in tending and prouiding all things necessarie, and as lyke both in the liniaments of the body and disposition of the mind to the Pother as may be. Let her forestown no occasion that may bring the child to quietness and cleanlines; for as the parts of a child as some as it is bodne, are framed and fathioned of the Pidwise, that in all points it may be strait and comely: so the manners of the child at the first are to be looked butto, that nothing discommend

the

## Euphues and his Ephæbus.

the mind, that no craked behauiour of bndecent demeanour be

found in the man.

Poung and tender age is easilie framed to manners, and hardly are those things mollissed which are hard. How as the Sticle is imprinted in the lost That: so learning is ingraven in the minde of a young Imp. Plate that divine Philosopher, admonished all Purses and weaners of youth, that they should not be to buse, to tell them fond fables of silthie tales, least at their enterance into the world, they should be contaminated with unsemly behaviour. Unto the which, Phocilides the Poet both pithely allude, saying: Tabilest that the child is young, let him be instructed in vertue and litterature.

Hogeouer, they are to be trained by in the language of their Countrey, to pronounce aptly and villiadly without frammering, every word and fillable of their native speech, and to be kept from barbarous talke, as the Ship from Rocks: lead being affected with their barbarisme, they be also insected with

their bncleane conversation.

It is an olde Proverbe, that if one divell the next bore to a Creeple, he will learne to hault, if one be conversant with an hipocrite, he will some endenour to dissemble. Then this yong Insant shall growe in yeares, and be of that ripenesse that he can conceive learning, insomuch that he is to be committed to the tuition of some Tutor, all dilligence is to be had to search such a one, as shall neyther be onlearned, neyther ill lived, new ther a light person.

A Centleman that hath honest and discreet Gernants, disposeth them to the increase of his Begniozies, one he appointed Steward of his Courts, another over-feer of his Lands, one his Factor in farre Countries for his Perchandle, another Pournayour for his Cates at home. But it among all his Servants he shall espie one, eyther fifthe in his talke, or foolish in his behaulour, eyther without wit, or voyo of honeste, eyther an ontheist or a wittall, him he sets not as a Source your and oner feer of his Pannors, but as a supervisor of his childrens conditions and manners: to him he committed the guiding and twittens

#### Euphues and his Ephcebus.

his Sommes, which is by his proper nature a flane, a knaue by condition, a beaft in behaviour: and somer will they bestow a hundred crownes to have a Porse well broken, then a child well taught. Taherein I cannot but marvaile to se them so carefull to increase their possessions, when they be carelesse to

have them wife that fould inherit them.

A good and discrete Scholemaister thould be such a one as Phoenix was, the instructour of Achilles, whom Pelleus (as Homer reporteth) appointed to that ende, that he should be unto Achilles, not onely a teacher of learning, but an example of god living. But that is most principally to be loked for, and most dilligently to be foreseene, that such Tutors be sought out for the education of a yong child, whose life hath never been stained with dishonestie, whose good name hath never been stailed into question, inhose manners hath been irreprehensible before the world. As Husbandmen bedge in their trees, so should god Scholemaisters with god manners hedge in the wit and disposition of the Scholler, whereby the blossomes of learning may the soner increase to a bud.

Panie Parents are in this to be milighed, which having neyther tryall of his honecie, not experience of his learning, to whom they commit the child to be taught, without any being one confideration put them to one, either ignorant or obtionate, the which if they themselves thould be of ignorance, the follie cannot be excused: if of obdinacie, they lewonese is to

be abhorreb.

river.

Some Kathers are overcome with the flatterie of those foles, which professe outwardly great knowledge, and thewe a certaine kind of disembling sinceritie in their lyse. Others at the intreating of theyr familiar friends, are content to commit their Sonnes to one, without either substance of honestie, or thad of the clearning: By which theyr doubling they are lyke those sicks men, which reten the expert and cunning phistion, and at the request of their friends, a domit the headless practiser, which damngereth the Patient, and bringeth the hodie to his bane. Draot bulyke unto those, which at the instant

# Euphues and his Ephœbus.

instant and importunate lute of their acquaintance, refuse a cunning Bilot, and chose an wishifull Pareiner, which has

sarbeth the Ship and themfelues in the calmeft Sea.

Con God, can there be any that hath the name of a father, which will efferme more the fancie of his friend, then the nurture of his Sonne? It was not in baine, that Crares would often fay, that if it were lawfull even in the Warket place his would crie out: Albether runne you fathers, which have all your carke and care to multiply your wealth, nothing regarbing your children, but whom you must leave all. In this they resemble him, which is very curious about the shoe, and

bath no care of the fote.

Baftoe this, there are many Jathers so instamed with the love of wealth, that they be as it were incensed with hate as gainst their children, which Aristippus sæing in an slo miser, did partly note it. This old miser asking of Ansippus, what he would take to teach and bring by his Sonne, aunswered, a thousand groates: Abousand groates: God sheld, aunswered this old huddle, I can have two Sernants of that price. Into whom he made aunswere, thou shalt have two Sernants and one Sonne, and whether will thou sell? Is it not absurd to have so great a care on the right hand of the childe to cutte his meate, that if he handle his knife in the left hand, we rebulke him senerely, and to be secure of his nurture in discipline and learning? But what doe happen to those Parents that bring by their children like wantons.

Wihen their Sonnes Hall growe to mans effate, distaining now to be corrected, stubburne to obey, giving themselves to baine pleasures, and unsemely passines, then with the solid Trewant they begin to wars wise, and to repeat them of their sommer solly, when their Sonnes shall infinuate themselves in the company of slatterers, (a kind of men more perrisous to youth, then any kind of Bealts.) When they shall have Parlots, frequent Lauernes, be curious in their attire, cossile in their dyet, careloss in their behautour, when they shall exther be common Dicers with Camellers, either toanton vallyers

with

# Euphues and his Ephoebus.

with Ladies, exther spend all their thrist in Mine, or all their wealth on women: then the Father curfeth his owne securitie; and lamenteth to late the childs missorume, then the one accuseth his dire, as it were of mallice, that he would not bring him by in learning, and himselfe of mischiefe, that he gave not his mind to god letters. If these youths had been trained by in the company of any Philosopher, they would never have been so dissolute in their life, or so resolute in their owne conceits.

It is good nurture that leadeth to berfue ; and dicrete bes

meanour that plaineth the path to felicitie.

If one have eyther the gifts of fortune, as great riches, or of Pature, as femely personage, he is to be despited in respect of learning. To be a noble man it is mak excellent, but that is our Auncestours, as Vhiles says to Aiax, as so, our nobilitie, our fock, our knowed, and whatsoener we our selves have not bone, I scarcely account ours. Riches are precious, but Horitume ruleth the roall, which oftentimes taketh away all from them that have much, and giveth them more which hath not thing. Glory is a thing worthie to be followed, but as it is not ten with great travails, so is it lost in a small time.

Beanty is such a thing that we commonly prefer before all things, yet it baveth before we perceive it to don'the. Health is that which all men veller, yet ever libied to tiny visale: Strength is to be withed for, yet is it eyther abated with an Ague, or taken away with age: Wholvever therefore boatteth of force, is to beattly, swing that he is in that qualitie not to be rompared with Beatts, as the Lion, the Bull, the Clephant.

It is vertue, yea vertue, Gentlemen, that maketh Gentlemen, that maketh the pozerich, the vale vome noble, the living a source agreement that wakethe work in the most miserable, most happie. Where are sino principall and peculier gifts in the nature of man, knowledge, and Reason: the one commandath, the other obeyeth: these thinges neyther the whirling whele of Fortune can change, neither the vereitfull causing of worldings separate, neither licknesse abate, neither age abolish.

Gilia

115

## Euphues and his Ephæbus.

At is onely knowledge, which worne with yeares, wareth poung, and when all things are cut away with the Sickle of Time. knowledge flourifteth fo bigh, that Time cannot reach it. War taketh all things with it euen as the whirle wole, vet mult it leave learning behindit, wherefore it was wifelie auns Owered in my opinion of Salpo the Philosopher: for when Demerrius won the Citty, and made it even to the ground, leaving nothing fanding, be bemaunded of Stilpo, whether be bad loft any thing of his in this great fpoile, buto whom he aunswered,

no berily, for war getteth no spoile of bertue.

Hato the like fence may the answer of Socrates be applied, when Gorgias afked him whether be thought the Perfian Ming bappy of not ? I know not faid be, bow much bertue and bifcis pline be hath : for happines both not confit in the giftes of for tune, but in the grace of vertue. But as there is nothing moze convenient then intruction for youth, to would 3 have them nurtured in fuch a place as is renotomed for learning, boyb of corrupt manners, budefiled with bice, that feing no baine be lights, they may the more cafflie abfraine from licentious befires . They that Audy to pleafe the multitude, are fure to dif pleafe the wife then that fame to flatter rube people with their rube pretences, levellat great bone, baning no aime at bone Die. Wiben I was bere a Student in Achens, it was thought a great comendation for a poung Scholler to make an Dration Extempore, but certainly in my indgement it is biterly to be condemned, for whatfeever is done rathin, is some alforably: he that taketh boon him to freake without premeditation. knoweth neither bow to begin, not where to end, but falling into a baine of babling, bitereth those things, which with mobeffie be Thould have concealed, and forgetteth thefe things, that before be had conceined. An Deation either penned, either premeditateb, ke peth it felfe within the bounds of Decorum. I have read, that Pericles being at funday times called of the people to plead, would alwayes answere that he was not ready; even after the fame manner , Demofthenes being fent for to beclaime amioff the multitude, flaid, and fago, Lammet pet promided, And

: 63

# Euphues and his Ephoebus

And in his inventue against Mydas? he færretti to prayfe the profitablenes of premeditation, I confelle, fall berbe (AU themians, that I have frutied and confidered bevelp with my felfe what to fpeake, for I were a fot, if without oue confideras tion had of those things that are to be spoken, I thould have spos ken bnaomfeblie . But I fpeake this not to this ende , to con-Demne the exercise of the wit, but that I would not have anie young Scholler openly to exercise it, but when he Chould grow both in ace and eloquence . infomuch as he fall through areat ble and good memorie be able aptly to conceive, and readilie to otter any thing, then this laying Extempore, beingethan abmiration and belight to the auditozie, and fingular pravie and commendation to the Diator. For as be that bath long time bene fettered with chaynes , being releafed ; balteth the ough the force of his former prons, fo he, that bath beine bled to a frid kind of pleading, when her hall talke Extempore, will fanour of his former penning. But if any will ble it as it were a precent for youth to talke Ortempore, be will in time bring them to an intmoderate kind of humititie. A sertaine Bainter brought Apelles to the counterfaite of a face in a Cable , faning: Loe Appelles, 3 bem this even nois . Where onto he replyed. Afthou batt bene filent, I would haus indued this vidure to have being framed of the foraine, I meruaile that in this time thou couldeft not paint many moze of thele: But're turne we againe . As I would bane tragicall and fatelie file fhunneb, fo & would have that abieit and bale phale efchueb. for this (welling) kind of talke bath little modellie, the other nothing moueth.

Belides this, to have the Deation all one in everie part, neyther adoened with fine figures, neyther spainckled with choose pheales, bringeth tedicultes to the heavers, and argueth the speaker of little learning, and less eloquence. His shorts moreover talks of manie matters, not alwayes harpe byon one string, he that alwayes singeth one note without Destant, breedeth no delight, he that alwayes playeth one part, breed houthsomnesse to the sare. It is varietic that monestic the

mind

## Euphues and his Ephcebus.

nommon yal awlaa) animt dyal gnigt and dua, namillado dnim the profitablenes of presentation, I consequit a drawaled (ail

Homer would fer, that it losthed bin to repente any thing againe, though it were never to pleafant oz profitable. Though the Rafe be fwet, yet being tyed with the Miolet, the fmell is moze fragrant: though meate nourill, pet baning and fauour. it prounketh appetite; The faireft Bofegay is mabe of many flowers , the finett pigure of fundzie colours, the ubolfomeff medicines of diners bearbs: wherefore it behoneth routh with all invultrie to fearch not onely the barb quellions of the labilar fophers, but alfo the fine rafes of the Lawyers, not onely the quirkes and quiebities of the Logitians, but aliato have a fight in the numbers of Arithmetricians the Triangles and Circles of the Geometricians, the Subere and Globe of the Aftrologic ans, the notes and crochets of the Buittians, the odde conceits of the Boets, the fimples of the Philitions, and in all things, to the ende that when they thall be will coto talke of any of them? they may be ignozant in nothing. O balat of grane col tonocid a

We that bath a Darben plot both as well fame the Abathearb as the Pargerom, as well the Leke as the Lilly, as well the wholfome Hilby as the faire Carnation, the which he worth his wholfome Hilby as the faire Carnation, the which he worth his inward parts, as swell followers to please his outward desire, as well fruitfull planta to reseate his sences, as faire the west operate his sight. Even so, whosever that hat hat hat he parpeand carpable wir, let him as well give his mind to face of anotherge of Divinitie, as to the protonno studies of Historyhie, that by his with he may not onely reape pleasure but profit, not onely contentation of mind but quickness conscience. I will proton the Courations of American and American Contents and American and Am

I mould have them first of all to follow Philosophie, as not auncient, yea, most excellent, for as it is pleasant to passe through many fagre Citties, but most pleasant to asset in the fairest; even so taread many Histories and larts it is pleasant, but as it were to ladge with Adhidolophic mast profitable;

ad At man pretily faid of Bion the Philippperis Quenius tobers

# Euphues and his Ephœbus.

the wover's could not have the companie of Penelope, they rait to her hand-maidens: so they that cannot attains to the knowledge of Philosophie, apply their mindes to thinges most vile and contemptible. Wherefore we must preferre Philosophie, as the onely Princesse of all Sciences, and other Arts as way-ting maides.

Hoz the curing and keeping in temper of the bodie, man by his inoutry bath found two things, Whilicke and Ersteile, the one cureth licknes, the other preferath the body in femper, but there is nothing that may beale difeafes, or cure wounds of the minde, but onely Whilosophie, 139 this thall we learne what is boneff, what vilhoneft: what is right, what is wome ; and that I may in one woed fay tobat may be fait Awbat is to be known, lubat is to be audided; how we analt to obey our Barents, remerence our Elbers, entertaine trangers, bonoz Manifrats. love our Friends, live with our Mines, vie our fernants, How we thould worthin God, be dutifull to our fathers; Canbe in awe of our Superiours, obey law, gine placeto Difficers, boto we may choose friends, nurture our Child, en, and that which is most noble, how we thould neither be to proude in profperis tie neither pentiue in adneratie, neither tike beatles ouercome with anger. od, no redemption, no refurredion?

alwaies the nurse of Philosophers, both now noursh onely the name of Philosophers, both now noursh onely the name of Philosophy. For to heake plainty of the viscour of Athens, who worth not set and sorvere at the Such playing at Dice, such qualting of winks, such palliance with women such bauncing, that in mine opinion, there is no qualter in Planneders to given to tippeling, no Courtier in Italie so given to viot, no creature in the world so milled, as a Student in Athens.

Such a confusion of vegrees, that the Scholler knoweth not his dutie to the Bacheloz, noz the Bacheloz to the Patter, noz the Bacheloz to the Patter, noz the Patter to the Patter, noz tempt of Pagistrates, such open sines, such prime tillante, such quarrelling in the Areets, such subtile platter in Chambers, as maketh my hart to melt suich so retaine of it, and should

# Euphues and his Ephœbus.

thould cause your minds Gentlemen to be penitent to remember it. Pozeouer, who both know a Scholler by his habit is there any hat of so believed know a Scholler by his habit is there any hat of so believed a fashion, anie boublet of so long a walf, anie hose so though, anie attire, either so could be courfle, either so krange in making, or so monkrous in wearing, that is not worne of a Scholler: Paue they not now in fixed of black cloth, black Heluet, in siede of course Sack cloth, fine Silke? Be they not more like Courtiers then Schollers, more like Stage players then Students, more like Russians of Naples, then disputers of Achens? I woulde to God they did not innitate all other Pations in the vice of the mind, as they do in the attire of the body; so certainlie, as there is no Pation, whose sassion in apparent they do not bie, so there is no wick heduesse published in anie place that they do not practise.

Athinke that in Sodom and Comorra, there was never more filthines, never more prive in Koure, twose pogening in Italie, more lying in Creet, more privie spoiling in Spayne, more foolatrie in Egipt, then is at this day in Athens, never such seas among the Heathens, such Scismes among the Eurks, such mis betiefe among the Instell, as is now among Schollers. Be there not manie in Athens which think there

is no God, no rebemption, no refurrection?

This could be the country of the cou

### Euphues and his Ephæbus.

the Stewes fraught with frumpets , when the Alfar inhere nothing but fancitie and holines thould be bled is polluted with bucleannes, when the Univerlities of Chaiffendoine, which thould be the eyes, the lights, the leaven, the falt, the feafoning of the woiles, are buttmed with blinde concupifcence; put out with pride, and have loft their fanour with impictie. Is it not become a by woode among the common people, that they had rather fende their childzen to the Cart then to the Univertitie. being induced to to fay, for the abufe that raigneth in the Unis uerlities, who fending their formes to attaine knowledge, finde them little better learned , but a great beale woule fined then when they went, and not onely buthrifts of their money, but allo banquerouts of good maners. Was not this the raule that caused a fimple moman in Greece to exclaime against Athens. faying : The Wailler e the Schollers, the Tutoz and the Du vill be both agrees, for the one carreth not how kittle paine bee taketh for his monie, the other bow little learning. I perreine that in Athens there bee no changelings : when of olde it was faib to a Lacedemonian, that all the Grecians knew bonelly, but not one pradifebattu lienando al fall sio When Panthanoa were cetebrated in Athens, an old man going to take a place, was mockingly refeded, at the latt comming among the Lacedemonians, all the youth gave him plate. which the Athenians liked well of. Then one of the Spartans erped out a Merilie the Arhenians kine in what Mould ber bothe

f

going to take a place, was inockingly refeded, at the last, comming among the Lacedemonians, all the youth gave him place, which the Achemans liked well of. Then one of the Spartans expedient elective the Achemans liked well of the note of the Spartans expedient elective the Achemans know what that the towns have found been for a certains time in Achem, feeling nothing but danned ing, draing, banquetting, surfetting, and licentious behavior, returning home, he was asken how all things stope in Achem, to whom he sunsweet, all things are honest there, meaning that the Achemans accounted all things good, and nothing had. How much abuses thouse or might be redicted in all University to commaunt, it should be seene, or of credite to persuade those that have the dealing with them, it should some be showed. Into bottill 3 so better reformation in Achema, the pouring Ephachus shall not be the persuade unit the tree.

#### Euphues and his Ephoebus.

nustured in Athens. I have fpoken all that you Gentlemen might fe how the Philosophers in Achens, pragife nothing leffe then Philosophie, what Scholler is her that is fo zealous at his Booke as Chrisippus, who had not his maine Melilla thrust meate into his mouth, had perriffed with famine , breing ab

wates Rudying.

till bo fo watchfull as Aristorle, who going to bedde, woulde have a ball of Braffe in his hand, that if he thould be taken in a flumber, it might fall and wake bim : 120, no, the times are changed, as Quid faith, and we are changed in the times, let bs endenour enery one to amend one, and wee thall fome be a mended: let be give no occation of reproch, and wee thall more eally beare the burthen of falle reports. And as we fee by lear ning what we would boe, folct be bo as we learne, then hall Achens flourift, then thall the Studients be bad in great repus fation, then thall learning have his hire, and every good from

Let his hope. What returne we once againe to Philo.

There is amongit men a trifold kind of life. Adine, which is about civil function and administration of the Commonweale: Speculatine, which is continuall meditation and fine Die: The third a life led. mothenmonly a letope life a anidle and a vaine life, the life that the Epicures account their inhois felicitie, a boluptuous life, replenified with all kindof banitie; If this active life be without Philosophie, it is an ible life, or at least a life cuill imployed, which is worfes if the contemplative life be seperated fro the aging, it is most pupasticule. I would therefore have my pouth fo to bestoine his funie, as her may be both exercised in the common-weale to common profit, and wel implayed prinatly for his owne perfection to as by his findy the rule be thall beare may be bireded, and by his gouernment his Mubic may bee increased; in this manner Din Pericles beate, in civill affaires : after this lost bib Archiegs the Tatentines Dyon the Syracufian, the Theban Epiminondas gouerne thep? Lit ties .

For the exercise of the body, it is necessarie also some what he abled, that is, that the childe thould be at fuch times pormit

#### Euphues and his Ephodousa

ted to recreate himfelfs, when his minds is durreome with fine die, least dull dulling himfelfs with onermuch industrie, he has come unit after ward to conceive readilie; descenthis, it will cause an apt disposition and natural strength; that it before the tained. A good composition of the body, largeth a good sundance on of old age, so, as in the faire Sommer inspector all things necessary so; the cold distinct, so good manners in pourth, and lawfull exercises, be as it were birtuals and mourishment for age, yet are their shours and passiness to the temperate that they waken not their bodies mais less layers him that they are should have done by such a sand to be a bled, that they are should have done by such a sand to be a bled, that they are should have done by such a sand to be a bled, that they are should have done by such a sand so to be the himbs, then the following of learning: the greatest enemies to discipline, as Place recounteth, are labours, and sieps.

Il It is also requiste that he be expert in martiall affaires in theoting, in parting, that be bainke and bunt for his honeft say Bime and recreation : and if after all thefe paffimes, the hall fænte fecure, nothing negarding his booken. I hould not have bin frour ged with ftripes, but threatened thith mortes windt bulled with blomes like fernants, the which the impacthe place beaten, the better they beare it and the teffethe year aforait if for children of good disposition, are either inticrotte prayfe to goe forward, or afhamed by diffraife to commit the like offenely those of obstinate and blackish behaviours are norther with wordes to bee verfinaded neither with firtues to inside rected They must nowe bee taunted with sharok rebukes aftraight. waies abmonished with faire wordes, nowe fireatened a mails ment, by and by promifed a reward, and bealt withall as Pore les doe with their babes, whom after they banemade to cryst they proffer the teatement to will a me all well in delitation the

But viligent here must be taken; that her de not praised as bove measure, least transing too much in his owns conceit, her becommeth obtinate in his owns opinions. I have knowne many fathers, whose great lone towards their Sonnes, hath being the cause in time that they loved them not: so when they see a sharpe with they some to conceine, for the desired they

知 3

baue,

#### Euphues and his Ephoebus.

haue, that hee shoulde out runne his fellowes, they loade him with continual exercise, which is the onely cause that hee sinketh under the burthen, and giveth over in the plaine Fielder Plants at a nourished with little ratio, yet did wich work with much, even so the mind with indistricted labour wareth more perfect, with over-much studie it is made smither.

Wie mult confiber that all our tife is benibed into remission and flubie. As there is watching, fo is there fleeve: as there is warred fo is there beace ras there is winter. fo is there Some merzas there be many working papes, to is there also manie Boly Davest and if Timey (beatle all in one worde, sale is the fauce of labour, which is plainty to be feene, not onely in lining things, but also in thinks without life. The unbenothe 150w. that we may the better bendit we bolofe the Warp, that wee maythe comentume him the body is kept in health, as well with falling as eating : the minte healed with eafe. as well as with labour. Those Burents are in my minde to bes milliket, mbich commit the whole care of the children the cultobie of a bireling, neither afking, neither knowing, bowtheir children main in learning: gog of the father were vellrous to examine his forme in that which he bath tearned, the Builter would be more careful towat be bib teach: but fieing the father carelelle what they learne, he is affore cure what he teacheth. What no table faying of the Dorfe keeper may be heers applyed, which land, Rothing the fact the Working the eye of the Ring, ast our

Allie to be exercised; which is the meining of children centime allie to be exercised; which is the greatest furtherance to Tear ning that can be. Furthis cause they fained in their close failles, Democis to be the mother of Perfection. Children are to be chastised if they be any filthy or unseemely talke, for as Democrates, if they be any filthy or unseemely talke, for as Democrates, if they be any filthy or unseemely talke, for as Democrates, it they be the the works at the pinks be contained to the free place, not bis different their cockentates, or refraining their company: they mill not live wantonly, neither speaks improvently, neither be and gry without cause, neither quarrelloss without colour. A seeing man being perhapte in matter, and product in subject with which

#### Euphues and his Ephoebus.

ners, gane Socrates a sputne, who being mound by his fallows to grue him another: If sayd Socrates an Asse had kicked need would you also have mee to kicke him againe: the great toised home in Socrates in suppositing his anger, is worthy great comendation. Archivas the Tarensine, returning from war, and finding his ground outregrowne with wedees, sand turned up with Poales, sent so, his Farmer, unto whom her sayd, Is were not angry I would make thes repent thy sill husbanday. Plato having a servaunt whose blisse was in filling of his kelly, swing him on a time tole and unhouses the behaviour, sayd, Dut of my light, so, A amincensed with angerical many was a servant of the said with angerical many said.

Although these examples be harved imitate, wet should size tie man do his endenour to represe that hote and heady hamo; which he is by nature subject onto. To be silent and dispert in company, though many think it a thing of no great waight and importance, yet it is most requisite for a young man, and most necessary sormy Phoebus. It never has been huitful to any to hold his peace: to speake, damage samany what is kept in silence is hushe, but whatsoever is blabbed out, cannot againe be recalled. We may see the cunning and envious book he of nature, which hath barred and hedged in nothing so through as the bengue, with two rowes of teeth, and there with two lopes besses, the hath placed it faired from the hart, that is though they better that which the hart had conceined. This also sould envise to be silent, seing those that we much talks, though they weake truly are never believed.

the glade of the minde, and it is an old prover be; Withatlodier is in the hart of the lober man, is in the mouth of the drivinkard. Dias holding his tongue at a feat, was tearmed there of a tatler to be a foole, who layd a grathere any wife man that can holde his tongue amiout the Wine at Muto Lohon Bias aunifurered. There is no foolethat can. A certaine Bentleman Vere in A chens invited the kings Legats to a coulty and luminious feat, where also he attembed many Philosophers, and talking of or wers matters, both of the Common weak and learning, onely

Zeno

#### Euphues and his Ephœbus.

Zeno fayd nothing. Then the Embattadour fayde, That thall we thew of the D Zeno, to the King? Pothing auniwered bet but that there is an olde man in Achens, that amount the Pothi

could hold his peace.

Anacharfus supping with Solon, was found a steepe, having his right hand before his mouth, and his lest upon his prinities, whereby was noted, that the tengue dictal be rained with the trongest britle. Zeno because he would not be inforced to respeale any thing against his will by torments, but off his tong.

and fet it in the face of the Evant.

Rowe, when chylozen shall by wifcome and ble refravne from overmuch tatiting; let them also be abmonified that fohen they thair weake they weake nothing but truth; to lye is a pire most beteftable, unt to bee fuffered in a flane, much leffeine conne. What the greatest thing is yet behind, whether that those are to be admitted as cockmates with chylozen; which loud them entirely 02 whether they be to bee banificution them! When as I famany fathers more cruell to they Choloren then carefull of the, which thinke it not necessary to have those about them that most tender them, then am I halfe as it ivers in a boubt to avue comfaile. But when Leal tomy rement brance, Socrates, Plato, Xenophone Etchines, Sabetes, and all those that formuch comment the love of men, which have also brought by many to great rule, reason, and pietie, then 7 am encouraged to immitate those, inhose excellencie both warrant iny precepts to be true. If any Chall love the chylofor his come ly countenaunce, bim woulde if baue to bee bamilhed as a most Dangerous and infections beaft rithe thall love him for his fal thers fake, or for his owne more mallities, him would I have to be with him alwaies; as supernisour of his manners, fuch bath it beine in times pall, the love of one Athenian to the other and one Lacedomonian tothe other.

But being fares umoff indicient for the concerns of a childe, I will freshe though their mords how he thould be trail use when her groweth in gives. I cannot but middle the nature of divers Parents, which appoint over fore and Autors

#### Euphues and his Ephorbus.

Tim

The their children in their temberiage, and wifter thent when theb come tabe roung men, to have the briole in their owne hande. knowing not that age requireth vather a barb tonaffle then a pleafant Wit and is fonen alluren to wickennes then childhood will be knoweth not the escape woschwiegen am they are this ties me they foome aurended either with threats theware to bee rol mediedad with faire promifes to be reliarded a Motthe finnes and faults of young men are almost or altogether intolleraided which give themselves to be belicate in their Diet. wontant in their ervences bling Dieine Banneing, Deunkritieffe libel Howzing of Wirgins, abuting Wines, committing abutteries! and accounting all things boneft, that are most had and abbonunable disast to invented

Deretherefoze muft be tifeb a bue regarde that thep: luft may be repressed, their riot abately their courage ruled of for berd it is to fe a rooma man to be mather of bimfelfe in which geineth hunfelt as it were a bonbellaue to fonde e ouerlaftinit affections, While Warents meht to take goo her efpecially at thistune, that thepframe their fannes to modellie, epther by threats or by rewards, either by faire promifes or feuere place tiles certber the wine the mileries of those that have been onercome with builmen as the hopeinelle of them that have content ten themselves within the bands of reasons these two are as it werethe Onlignes of hertne, the hope of hondard the feare of punishment. Butchiefly, Warents mult cause they wouth to ahandon the focietie of those which are neted of anil living and leime behaviour, tobich Pysbagoras fermentominhat observety cone, and but us a for it forests, on wording bid sold a ur to dens, and

tanfir Cathat one thould abitaine from the tafte of those thinns that have black lailes : that is, we mult not be the companyof those whose comput manners no an it were make their life blacks Botto gogaboue the buildince that is, to renerence in Rice, neither for feare or flatterie to leane but oany the partiel ly. Por to line in idlenes, is, that flath thous be abhogreb. That the thoula mot light energemen by the hand; that is a that wit hould not source friendibin with all . Botto breare aftraint Ring:

that

#### Euphues and his Ephoebus.

Ring: Chatis, that ive Combinate our ite to as the need not to fetter it with chaines. Hot to bring fire to the Anaghters is, that we mult not provoke any that is furious, with words, hot to eath duribarts ethat is, that we chould not be ever felies with thoughts, confirme our bovies with fighes, with fobbel or with ease to pincious earkness. To about our remaining that is, not to needle in civill affaires or bollines of the Common weals, for in olutions the elevisions spagistrates was made by pulling of Beanes, hat to put our meate in Scapic, that is, we hould not speake of inamers of vertices, to those whose minds be infested with bires, a smaller grands and with it is unfitted by the control of the controls.

is, when we are at the pount of ocath, we should not be opposed to unity griefs, but willingly gold to nature. But I will returne to my some precepts that is, that young increasing the term to my some precepts that is, that young increasing the kept from the company of those that are witched repealed in some the fight of the statement. For I say many as I fine off earliest their before laid, that there is no trinds of healt to reclaim as the sate for the losine and the factors, nothing that will some consume both the some unity father, and all bonest friends will be a state.

Wil ben the father exhibiteth the fanne torobalette q the thir Mer promoketh him to duine theben the gather warnety him to continencie the flatterer allureth hibrto latt f when the fa ther abmonifieth him to thrift, the flatterer baleth bint to prodigallity : tohen the Father encourageth him to labour, the flats terer layeth a rulliters under his elbowe to flespe; biboing him to ente, winke, and to be morry for that the life of manie forte gone, and but as a thort fhabely, and faing that wer bute bute tobile to line, who would bo like a fernant? They fay, that now they, frathers be olde, and coate through age like Sarir ous. Direct it commeth that young non, gluing not energit tentine rare, but ready to pre do flatto ers fall fitte factionis factures herreof it procedetty is that they have the interest, marry betage they be wife and wie before they thister. There be the bealts which lyas by the trenchers of grang Contlemen, we confirme the treatures of their recencioes, their bether that : omia:

# Euphyes and his Ephoebus.

that footh young purious all their layings, that topholoithem in all their nooings, with a year arnay, these he they that are at every both, at every nodes, from many frozince, flancs by free will, now reason and special many father that would have his child need to the first her will have his child need to the first her murtured and brought to in house free to this expell their Patheters, which have Parents altogether precise, or too feners an correction, but let them with miliones freque light offeness, and remember that they them believe have been young: As the Phillion by mingling bitter payfores with finest liquous, bringethe health to the body, so the fither with the perchibes, fearly health to the body, so the fither with the perchibes, fearly health to the body, so the fither with the perchibes, fearly health to the body of the fither with the perchibes, fearly health to the fither he throughly angry by on god or casion, let his man dout me his cage, so That after he flouth

cation, let hinternt continue his rage, for Abbutather he thould be forelangerethen bur heade pleased the soben the sound that her fixther hat become that it beate against him, he becommotive personer without regarding his Fathern tre, neither his commentations of distance of the land of the l

them not, and feing them, let them not feme to fee thempilant hearing thent let them not feents to hear in Will lead entity for get the offences of our friends be they never fogrent, with Gall we not forgine o efrance of our children be they never to fmall? Wife beare often dimes mith our fernaunts, and shall wee not fomeetimes with our formes : The faireft gewirt is rales as inell with the mand as with the forme, the witheff chile is as frome engraced with a wording with a weapon. Afthy toune be to thisborne, obtainably to rebell against thee, to fo withall to perfetter in his wickebnes, that neither to; tears of punithment, neithen for hope of remard, be is any timy to be declaimed, then feeke ant firme marringe fit for his vegree 4 a which is the Tarett signs of youth, and the Groungell chains to fetter affections that caube found. Det let bis wife be fuch alone, as is neyther much noble in birth, or farre morearither in mobbs of but accepting to the wife faguige . Cheafe me mary way to meate as maple, equall Pour

#### Euphqes and his Ephqebus.

englall divoth, for they that on belies great voluties, boristly it marrie themselves to the wealth, then to their wife, well like the

Butto returne to the matter : It is molt requilite that the thers, both by their discreet counsaile and honest conversation, doint etample of intitation to the irrebilizen, that they feeling in their Barentsiasiffivere in a classe the perfection of mamners, then may be encouraged by their right bining for partie thedike pietie, afor if a father rebuke his childe for finearing, and he himselfe a biasphemer, both be not for that in befeama his sons bice bealfo noteth his owne e Afthe Father countaite his don to refrainc ettine in most bulybellome, and prink himfelli bij moderative, continue mot as well reprone his digne felly as as ro buke his tonnes . Age alwais sught to be a mirrour for gouth? for tobergold age is unbudent, there certainly pout haid needs the thant leffer lubers the agen have no respon of their honoup nable and gray haires, there this point of nal lants hausliftle co garbut their boneft behautourrand drone from the obticione all. jubere age is not granitie, there youth is paft grace. The fund of all, wherefuith I would hand my Ephcebus inductions their I mail be hatte frim infraste bothall breife lie appears imabit folthem not, and faing them, let them not fame to fer thempriviol first, that be be of honest Barents, muftenlof his Bother, brought by in fuch a place as is not incorrect; both forthe abus and manners, with the haperfor as is tripefiled of great water of profound knowledge, of absolute perfection withat her belief Arusted in 18 bilosophie, what the be manatta finde armine, and haur in all Driencests finack, wherebythedunar rekolden finte of any things that his bedie be keptinglis vine trangch by ho well exercise, his wit and memoryby villigent & unisethat ha abandon all affurements of bice, 'and continuality encline to vertue affili hieb ifile thatte an iturned connecto na mend the mailes A hope that if ener Places Common intalestrati describitioning Ephochis shall be n Cittisin to fint if Ailfield sinabany happie man, if will be my childer if Tulket angent any to be anable lute Datour, it will begny point youth I ambeeretherefore Gentlemen, taerhoot you athat touth all inouffrie you apply 2 €€ liauas. pour

#### Eupholes and this Ephodous

point minimized anthe Mintrie of While Andies it has hear his collect pour fel men himients, to fortunate be totobents; that he perceip onine minthemanic office belief of to you will kind his formation as ofitie universificatelle ster mangaget allement beschreitentisies with traing de limbra, and with translinks with lacre salth chiefer Countries: whole you halt fetomoie with the then levels hertite and beit, Periter mittecality attire itele neutrentime Dutch hat, the seventelificies the fivenishatinies tone whalin clover, the Coloure finell be" er the tailed doing on't Const lid 10 Mall motivous even on the benildies distinguished by will be way your hart with follie, letailetiat mois dince watersabil pout il fattet b himfelfe desfat us à foude, interrood : Mortele linnoto being cut, though it be heaten that will divaring dechains a fearne, og ag fingelimmen fininet ibith black inche etiqual it tie to after neuer foreften ; totil b haue me yaman ande i lag penida ence intenglate or maintenantly lovel thought begat he thru peare a fearre, by the which dremay gelfethe utions and nearceb, and a bleutiff; inherebi our inno inmorabe do binestaines. Réfraine fro vicing, tilhichdeanthe inales that Pyreusines Ariben to the hatt, and from hadin was the meaner that inti lohi damite interpresent will disalow boneffirmerentiony withough a contest the animou I freske bololy bitto you, became of any adde James worth the Achens bath beine Linkath Achensial contract Arthur thousand of tan geffe. Wet und etteris Tune annial bund in undaaro brous tivere voor shawhet afreggent northall madunitie Labour where either for delire of belieute tates of homeeting of which full companions, we both spend commande buildies with their time iblie! immitate him in dife; lubbur hon tiente fe hone frag his learning. Ariftoole, linho hammener dinto in ithe containe Af those that inches their actions the desired adjusted the article and a state of the article and a s

or All beroin nothing wore finited them there mothing more fineters we have not as Some afaith, little time to time, but we link numely neither have more than hite by hatner, but we make the horse by noughtined a some life in long, it we know but to

#### Emphuts and His Ephobousi

hed main eight are principally and an eight of the principal of the constitution of th

mistage edine the proposit son to move lie in Dutie ta pour dilbers, to biligence in your flu the de balle dobere minerentes gloeb, and my de hemes bombufes that naigned in Arbenis & It hingis the area by the letubant lying Athe ignorant, inhiciture allunics enemies to learning ethaneparts of fisch anfaire their; and for romen at them. enty reporter of am older man in Naples of that there nemini Adheon then diri allikaiys mare inhutan schollend thes all findle soutes arms banks Altholina, more for all more social method and the spoi han although grant method things although grant with the but d house, petran gand but lanient, that they the glat tie seemen to hatenes and I fearminet they bee not altogethet falls : there agrand great friently artificant spore profe be found fite, no group Loudes, without great hap blocks prairie thekeloge your literally somet flubres to attaining of furth perfection that benthe might of the firong, neither the males of the torak then that wife reports of the ignorant, be able to spotte you his tearning. And complete intlanguation confidential

The greatest harme that pour interior that the first with the preatest captaline that poer captility which is the description of the property in the first pour parties to profession the greatest controps that will can be the first of parties and parties that the first that th

E OF

Sitt

# Euphues and his Ephuebus

is with wiseburne to the fireting that Madent profite be grace both with hindelle.

102 Ant hare & canitat chouft but gind don that comitaite, that an oluman fie Naples ginie ine mott wifet, although y hav the neither grace th follow is, weither tall to has save to it, octiving pon that specifical it, because I win back beliefe the optober to make Looker, there Chaife Linth his bestiet fill beson reductions frais

10 ADelcentifito pour othere colincientes) enimeet hairs your felnes the great difference wereichte traching mit that he stines, felies the great unevente archite baseling of but and following the chief but not missioned by the chief of the total point of the chief of the chie patterly etime in houself retreation in them an administration in the constraint of 
Dhis was his grand and goody noutle ; whole countaile mould have you all to follow, frequent Lemarch, life disputable sus openity, neglect not pour printer fluores; ternot begreen be guart for load, but to bearning and to miner but to mainledge : and because you thatt be the better encouraged to foliste my countaile, 3 will be as to were an dynampte ing felte, welllight o of Ones, the bepth seen studient et lla tory mir

Enghuer hatting wiese bis vitteinit , ant finither fhote me cepts which he thought accepted for the infirmtion of paints, gave his minde to the continual fluvie of Abilolophy, friemnet as he betaine publique straver in the dinther tiele, with fifth to mendation, as neuer any belope bint, in the Which he continueb for the space of terrale yearen; muly fear ching out the fecrets of Anthers, and the pipumentifiction at populations ? and bautig colletter into the balames his Leanies il thought to the profit of goung Bololler's to tet them though in britte, billen if hee hat stone, I would alle inthis Die Anatonie Bine interfeb, but

#### Euphubs and his Ephotbusi

de alteriug his der per acter mination; de le intochis discour le with himfelfe. . new pind name the Bear the bank bank and the bear to the firm and the bear whall formatten thy Woh in beaucit a that thy wit then, that the kather becomplised to the utilities of humanic avicenome, then out sudschriftete mage bern tothicknith bis okes, then Christ with his bloome will hat comfout cand thou finds in lichilasophie farthy multie confrience s withat bone of the extense divine all that global beings of the Gallette and and a The the set of the self of the there is a wear early year, and the third and if there is a select the colling the wart we describe is a strong the trained the estate of the Continuent in the principal select the self of the Continuent in the self of the self of the colling of the self of the s ing of the chase in minus of military as a manufacture in the chair in is, and ought to be most notable. Without this, there is no Latypen, he benever in glagueut no là bilition à be bet nieuer lo erellenie no filipiolophen los periculation de lucinario na pers in ingres, to ballantine probation white hois take activities chare : and because you shall be the better encurodesteddadus farewell therefore the fine and filed obnafe of Ciceron, the plealant Cligies of Onid, the bepth and motouren knowledges of Antique Haremall Mothogickicfarewell-fiblilitopling fares pulled learning, to be big not forms do mthe bolled the caue his mines to the cantinuali findis of Philosophaldick alfor an this learning that wer finde unlike for the intake, and warrowfor the Arona, in this shall towais howe the improvent: may be indicated, the philippies equivery the penisms continue ten, the wicken punither the godispolarued. Ohn fi monitor Centlemen mould fone surrecteduction therefore the frontiers from their pass uentie a dinine milleries. It is minumana pestiand lamentable ince

#### Euphues and his Ephorhiis.

to fee, that if a young youth have the nifts of Cature, as a tharp wit, or of fortune, as fufficient wealth to maintaine them, be imployeth the one in the baine inventions of lone, the other in the vile braueric of prive: the one, in the pattions of his minde, and promifes of his Late, the other, in furnithing of his bodie, and furthering of his luft. Dereof it commeth, that fuch baine Ditties, fuch ible Sonnete, fuchenticing fonas, are fet foozth to the gase of the worlde, and griefe of the godly. 3 my felfe, knowe none foril as my felfe, who in times patt have beene fo Superfittionly appliced, that I thought no beauen to the Para pife of Love, no Angelt to be compared to my Laby: but as res pentance bath caufed me to leave and leath fuch baine belights. fo wifebome bathopened unto mee the perfect gate to eternall his end, and then the icone to have t letter has been found ali

Beffpes this, I my felfe hane thought, that in Dininitie there might be no eloquence tobich I might immitate, no pleas fant inmention which & might followe ino belicate phrafe that might belight me, but now I fe, that in the facred knowlebas of Sons will, the energe tonuence, the true and perfect brate, the testimonic of falmation both abive : and feing without thes, all learning is iguozance, all wifebome meere folly; all toit! plaine bluntnes; all inflice intquitie nall eloquence, barbas rifne ; all beantie. Deformitie : 4 will frend all the remanister of my life in Aubring the olde Tellament inherein is verfati red the comming of my Samour, and the netwe Wellament wherein my Chaift both fuffer for my finnes ; and is crucified for my repemption, whose bitter agenica found call every goo Christian into a fhinering Aque, to remember his antouish whole (meating of water and blood, fould cause enery Benout and sealous Catholike to thed teares of repentance, in rememe brance of his torments.

Euphues having viscourted thus with himfelfe, Did immedi atly abandon all light companie, all the pilputations in scholes of Philotophie, and gane himfelfe to the touchflone of holines in Dinivitie accounting all other things as most bile and is one and in contemptible of the en lo selod an austille.

#### Euphues and his Ephæbus.

# Fuphues to the Gentlemen Schollers in

Be Perchant that traualleth for gaine, the Dufbandman that toileth for increase, the Lawyer that pleadeth for gold, the Crasts man that see keth to line by his labor, all these after they have fatted themselves with sufficient, eyther take

theps eafe, or leffe paine then they were accustomed; Hippomanes cealed to runne when the had getten the goale : Hercyles to labour when hee had obtained the vidozy: Mercurie to pipe luben be bab caft Argus in a flumber. Enery action bath his end, and then we leave to fineat when we have founde the the livet. The Ant though the foyle in Commer, pet in Winter the leaneth to tranaile. The Bethough the belight to fuck the faire flower, get is the at the last cloped with the Wonnie. The Spyber that inequeth the finell thach, cealeth at the laft; when the bath finithed her webbe. But in the action and findis of the minbe (Gentlemen) it is farre otherwife, for he that take feth the fluet of learning, endureth all the fower of labour. We that leketh the bepth of knowledge, is as it were in a Labor rinth, in the which the farther he goeth, the farther be is from the end : 01 like the Bird in the lime buth, which the more the Ariueth to get out, the fafter Hicketh in.

And certainly it may be fain of learning, as it was fained of Nectar the brinke of the Goos, the which the more it was brunken, the more it would oner-flow the brim of the Cup, neither is it farre bulke the flome that groweth in the River of Curia,

the which the moze it is cut, the moze it increaleth.

And it fareth with him that followeth it, as with him that hath the Dzopfie, who the moze he dzinketh, the moze he thirsteth. Therefoze in my minde, the Studient is at lette ease then the Dre that dzaweth, or the Affect that carrieth his burthan, who neither at the bord when others eater to boide of labour, neither in his bed when others fleepe, is voice of meditation.

But

# Euphues and his Ephæbus.

But as in manuarie crafts, though they be all good, yet that is counted most noble, that is most necessary : so in the actions and fludies of the minde, although they be all worthie, vet that beferneth greateff paile, lobich bringeth greateff profit . And to we commonly bo make the bell account of that, which both be moft good. We effeme better of the Philition that mini Areth the potion, then of the Apothecarie that felleth the brugs. Dow much moze ought we with all biligence, frubie, and inbuffrie, to fpend our thoat pilgrimage, in the fæking out of our faluation. Claine is Philosophy, baine is Philick, baine is Lain. saine is all learning, without the talke of Dinine knowledge. I was betermined to write notes of Philosophy, which had beene to feede you fat with folly: pet that I might forme neis ther tole, neither you entil imployed, I have here fet boinne a briefe bifcourfe, which of late I have hat with an Beretick, which kept me from idlenes, and may if you reade it, beter you from Berefie. It was with an Atheift, a man in mine opinion monttrous, yet tradable to be perfinaded. By this you hall fe the ablurd botage of him that thinketh there is no Gob , oz an bufufficient Coo ; pet bere thall you find the fumme of farth. which instiffeth onely in Chaise, the weakenes of the Law, the Grength of the Bolpell, and the knowledge of Bods will. Here thall you finde hope if you be in dispaire, comfort, if you bee dis Areffed : if you thirly, brinke : meate if you hunger. If ye feare Moles, who faith: Whithout you fulfill the Lawe you thall per rift : behold Chrift, which faith, I have over come the Lawe. And that in thele befperate bayes, wherein fo many beds are fowne, as in the wayning of the world, wherein to many falls Christs are come, you might have a certaintic of your faluation on, I meane to fette bowne the Touch-frone, whereunto every one ought to trult, and by the which enery one fould trie him felfe: which if you follows, I boubt not, but that as you have proued learned Bhilosophers, you will also procede excellent Dinines, which ODD graunt.

# Euphues and Atheos.

THEOS. I am glad Bughues, that I have found the attriffice, and partly that I might be mercie, and partly that I might be perfected in a thing that much troubleth my conference. It is concerning & D. There be many that are of

this minde, that there is a Cob, whom they trarme the creator of all things; a God, whom they call the Sonne, the rebamet of the world : a God, whom they name the holie Bholl, the work ker of all things, the Comforter, the Spirite : and get they are of this opinion also, that they be but one God, coequall in point er, incomprehentible, and pet a Trinitie in perfon. 3 for mig part, although anrenot fo crebulous to believe thepy curious opinions, yet am I belirous to heare the realons that thoulde being them onto fuch fond and frantike imaginations: \$ 50 as I knowe nothing to be to abfurd, which tome of the Abiloto phers have not befended, fothink Inothing fo errorious, lobir b fome of our Catholikes baue not maintainet. Afthere were, as biners breame, a Goo that would remenge the opprefilion of the wilbowes and fatherleffe, that monitoreward the scale of the mercifull, pittie the page, and parbon the penitrut, then would the people either flame in greater aine . or nivemore lone to wards their God. Land to he may and the D: dink of at a show.

I remember Tully disputing of the nature of Coos, bring geth Dionisius as a scotter of such vaine a venice decided, who seeing Asculapius with a long beard of golds, and Apollo his father beardesse, played the Barber and shaved it from him, saying: It was not decent that the sounce should have a beard and the Father none. Decing also superer with an expansion of gold, tooke it from him, sesting thus: In Sommer this arrate is to bearie, in Whinter twoods, here I seare one of Westernboth warmer for the colde and lighter for the heate! We comming also into the Temple, where certains of the Gobs with golden gifts stretched out their hands, twhether all away says

ing: Witho will be formad, as to refuse things to dentile effered. Dott theu not fee Euphaies, What anal account he made of their Goos? for at last, fapling into the Country with a profeerous winde; bee laughing faid : Loe, fee you not my maifters believe well the Gods reward our facrilebge. I conto reffente infinite opinions of excellent men, who in this point helbe dring live, but effectally Pythagoras. And in my indement, if there bee ann Coo, it is the woold wherein we line, that we the only Coo. What can we behold more noble then the worlde, more farer, more beautifull, more glorious? What more matelicall to the fight or more constant in substance? But this by the way Euphues. Thane greater & moze fozeible arquiments to confirme mine opinion, and to confute the errour of thole . that imagine that there is a God, but first I would gladie heare the thape an aunfloere to that which I have faid : for well I know that thou art not onely one of those which be lone that there is a Cob. but of them also which are somecife in honouring him. that they be fearce wife in helping themfelues.

Euphues. It my hope Atheos were not better to connect this, then my hap was here to conferre with thee, my heart would breake with grices, which beginneth freshly to blood for forrow; thou has firothen mee into inch a finitering e color terrour, at the rehearing of this thy monthrous opinion, that I lake curry mimite when the ground should open to traditione the up, and that God which thou knowed not; thouldo with

thunder from beauen, Urike thee to hell.

Was there ever Barbarian to fencelette, ever minereant to barbarous, that vio not acknowledge a lining and everlating lehoush? I cannot but tremble at the remembrance of his Paiettie, and voil thou make a mockery! D'imquitie of times, D corruption of manners, D blatchemie against the heaven. The Beathen man faith, yea, that Tully inhom then thy lette alteaugest, that there is no Pation to barbarous, no hinte of people to lauage, in who there reset had for this persuation, that there is a God, and even they that in other parts of their life, seeme very little to differ from bante beatts, do continually

D 3

have

kiepe a certaine lieve of Religion: so throughly bath this common principle possessed all mens mindes, and so fall it sicketh to all mens bowels. Pea, Idolatrie it selfe is a sufficient profe of this persuasion: so, we see how willingly man abaseth him selfe to honour other creatures, to do, homage to stocks, and to goe on pilgrimage to Images. If therefore man rather then be will have no God, do worship a stone, how much more art thou duller then a stone, which goest against the opinion of all men?

Place, a Philosopher, woulde often say, there is one inhom we may call God omnipotent, glozious, immortall, but o whose similitude, we that crape heere on the earth, have our soules framed; what can be said more of a Heathen, yea, what more

of a Chaiftian

Arilforle toben he could not finde out by the fecterie of pature, the cause of the chaing and flowing of the fen, cried with a loude boyce. D thing of things, have merep been mee.

Cleanthes alleabged foure causes which might induce man to acknowledge a God: the first, by the fore-fixing of things to come : the fecond, by the infinite commodities which we bailte reape, as by the temperature of the Ayze, the fatneffe of the Carth, the fruitfulnes of Trees, Wlants, and bearbes, the at bundance of all things that may either ferue for the meceflity of many, at the Superfluitie of a felue : the third, by the terro; that the minde of man is Eroken into, by the lightnings, thuribes rings, tempells, hailes, fnowe, earth-quakes, vellilence : by the Arange and terrible fights which cause by to tremble, as the raining of blood, the fire imprecions in the Clement, the ouer-debring of floods in the earth, the probigious thapes and bunaturall formes of men, of beatls, of birbs, of fithes, of all creatures, the appearing of blazing Contess, which ever proge nofficate some Arange mulation : the fight of two Sunnes, which happened in the Confulthin of Tudaranus and Aquilius: with thefe things mortall men being afrighted, are inforced to acknowledge an immortall and ommipotent Cod. The fourth. by the equality of mouing in the Beatien, the course of the Sun.

#### Euphries and Atheosl

the order of the Carrs, the bantifulnes of the Clement, the light whereof might lufficiently induce to so believe; they proceede not by chaunce, by nature, or declinic, but by the eternall and binine purpole of some annipotent Deitie. Dereof it came, that when the Philosophers could give no reason by Pature, they would say, there is one above Pature, another would call him the Arct momer, another the ayder of Pature, and so forth.

But why goe I about in a thing to manifelt, to vie profes to manifold e Ifthou benie the truth, who can prove it, if thou being that black is black, who can by reason reprove that, when thou opposed the self-e against reason. Thou knowled that manifest truths are not to be proved, but believed, and that he that benieth the principles of any Art, is not to be consucted by arguments, but to be left to his owne folly. But I have a vetter opinion of the and therefore I means not which with Ibilosophie, but to try this by the touchstone of the Secreptures.

Tota read in the fecond of Exodus, that when Moles bettreb of Goo to know what bee fould hame him to the chilbren of Ifraell the aimfinered, thou thatt fay, 3 am that 3 am. Again, 3 am that Fann Againe, Berthat is, bath fent mee birte pou. The Logo shen your Bob, be is God in the Beanen abone, and in the Carth beneath, Jam the firft, and the laft 3 am: 3 ant the Lope, and there is no other belibes mee. Againe, Tam the Logo, and there is none other, I baue created the light e made barknes, making peace and framing will. If thou believ to buberftand what God is, thou thalt beare. De is even a columnia fire, the God of revenge, the OD D of indgement, the truing Doo, the fearther of the raines, be that mabe all things of nothing, Alpha and Omega, the beginning, and pet without beginning ; the end, and yet everlalling. One at tobole breath the Bountaines thall thake, whole feate is the loffie Cherubins, whole foote foole is the Barth. Inuilible, pet feeing al things! a tealous Coo, a louing Coo, miraculous in all poynts, in to part monitronis. Befides this, thou thalt well uncerftand, that bee is fuch a God, as will punith him whatfoeuer bee be, that blasphemeth bis name for boly is the Lozd. It is written bring

opt the blasphemer without the Tenta, and let all those thean him, lay their bands byon his bead, and let all the people them him. He that blashimmeth the name of the Lazde, that dogs the beath, which a realous Hod, that inhesseur commutativity to last the high frames Poop, bee will strike with termide plagues. Turne not to Jools, neither make Gods with hands. I am the Love your God. Thou that make no Image, which the Love the Con above the Tou that have no new God, neither worth on above the Tou that have no new God, neither worth on above the Tou that the Gods of the Tentiles are been will after some 3001s, for all the Gods of the Tentiles are been will be found that the point so the transfer of the Tentiles are been will be found to the transfer of the Tentiles are been will be that man that ingraveth any Amages, it is an above the feather that man that ingraveth any Amages, it is an above the feather that was the poop of the Wenters that was the transfer that the confounce that were the graves. I have the Love They that he confounce that were the graves. I have the the many that the confounce of the transfer the transfer to the property of the transfer that was the property of the transfer that was the property of the transfer that we have the property of the transfer that the property of the transfer to the property of the transfer to the property of the transfer to the transfer to the property of the transfer to the transfer

If all these testimonies of these crustures counce mode they to anknowledge, living God, barten to be they say of such as hes altogether morabulous. Over you belower wall air or him therefor little, when he to store that he take in barte they believed there is no God, and therefore they stall not be postonenof him. The weath of the Horn that kindle against an ordering sase than If ye because not me shall not ensure. Here that between that not be damined, the that believes that have because of the that between that in the dame that hurs not him be position of the unbelsevers shall be in the dame that hurs not him the from and brunkons, which in the second mostly.

Afthou feels in threelfe. Asheot, any harms of grace, pay unto the karbe that her will rank it to flame; if their have, no testing of fayth, yet pray, and the karbe will give abundance, to a beets a terrible G.D.D., whose boyce in like the ruthering of many waters, to is he a mercifull God, inhose tecepisare as loft as Dyle. A bough her breathe fire out of his notetheir against sinners, yet is he milds to those that asks sozgive nester but if thou he obstrate, that sains, thou will not see, and knowing, then will not acknowledges then that thy hart her hardened with Pharao, and grace shall be taken away from thee with Saules.

Thus

Jua

Thus fayth the Lords, who to believeth, thall not perrith, beaven and earth thall patte, but the wood of the Lord thall in

pure for ener.

faubunit thy felfe before the Ahrone of his Patellie, and his mercy that faue the Monourthe Lord, and it shall be well with the. Bestoes him tears no trange Gov. Honour the Lord with all thy souls. Offer unto God the sacrifice of praise. We not like the Pipocrites, which honour God with their lips, but be farre from him with their barts, neyther like the sole, that

fayth in his bart, there is no Cob. 11 . 10

But if thou wilt will perlever in thine oblimacie, thine end thall be worfe then thy beginning, the Lord, yea, thy Saniour, thall come to be thy Judge, tobenthou thalt behold him come in glozy, with millions of Angels, and Archangels, when thou that le bim appeare in thunberings and lightnings, and flat things offire, suben the Spountaines Gall melt, and the Dea nens be topapped op like a fcrowle, tohen all the earth Chall tremble, with what face will thou behold bis glozy, that bent eft his Coubead ! How canft thou abive his prefence, that beleuelt not his ellence ? Wi hat hope canti thou baue to be faneb. tobigh biobelt mener acknototebge anie to bee thy Samour Ehen thall it be fare unto the, and to all those of the Sect, 'the leffe non revent, ) Depart all you workers ofiniquitie; there hall be merring, and gnathing of teth. Withen you thall the Abraham, Ifaat, and Iacob, and all the Brophets, in the king Dente of ODD, and ye to be that out & Don thall conceine beates and being forth wood, your owne confeiences thatt cone fairs you tyke fire.

Deare word than fie Atheas, the threatnings against in belieners, and the punishment prepared to miscreants. That better and sounder profe canst thou have that there is a Contien thire amore conscience, sopicy is mito that a thousand will nesses. Consider with the selfe that the fouls is immortall, made to the Junge of the almighty Con; be not cutious so enquire of Con, but carefull to betwee, neither be thou unfortate, if thou leathy finites abounds, but tay that to obtain mercie, to

the Lord will faue the, because it is his pleafure. Bearch ther,

fozethe Scriptures, they teffife of him.

Atheos. Truly Euphues you baue fapte fomiobat, but von no about contrary to the cultome of Scholes, which me thinks you thould willigently observe, being a voofested Whitotopher : for when I bemaund by what reason men are induced to acknowledge a God, you confirme it by courfe of Scripture, as inho fould fay, there was not a relation betweene God and the Scripture, because as the olde fathers befine; mithout Scrip. ture there were no Goo . no Serioture without a Con . Talbo. former therfore benieth a Coohead, benieth alfo the Deriptures which tellifie of bim . This is in my opinion abfurdam perabfurdius, to prome one abfurbitie by another . If thou canti as Substantially by reason prome thy authority of Serintures to be true, as thou halt proued by Scriptures there is a Goo, then will I willinglie with the both believe the Secriptures, and inosibip thy God . I have heard that Anciochus commaunded all the coppies of the Wellament to be burnt from whence there fore have we thefe new Bokes, I thinke thou wilt not fay by Revelation, therefore que forward. Leave to not our alleres ?

Euphues. I have read of the milk of a Ligrede, that the more Sait there is thrown into it, the frether it is, and it may be that either thou half eaten of that milke, or that thou art the tall belo of that Monter, for the more reasons that are beaten into the head, the more forcasonable thou feemest to be, the greater my anthopities ferue, the leffer is the beliefe. Es fouthing the and thoritie of Scriptures, although there be many arguments indich be prone, yea, and enforce the wicked to confesse that the Scriptures came from God, yet by none other mean then bythe fecret tellimeny of the haly Choff; our harts are truly perfes Ded, that it is God which weaketh in the Law, in the Wiophets, in the Colvell, the orderly disposition of the wishom of God, the portine favouring hothing of earthlines, the gooly agreement of all parts among themfelues, and especially the baseneste of contemptible woods, oftering the bigh mifferies of the beauen le kingbonie, are fecond belps to establish the focripture way it

Bokes of other Religious are later then the Bokes of Moses, which yet both not himselfe innent a new God, but setteth footh to the Israelines the God of their Fathers. Whereas Moses both not hive the shame of Leuy his Father, not the murmuring of Aaron his bother, and of Mary his sister, not toth advance his owne children: the same are arguments, that in his Boke is nothing sained by man. Also the miracles that hapned as well at the publishing of the Laws, as in all the rest of the time, are infallible profes that the veriptures proceded from the mouth of God: Also whereas Moses speaketh in the person of sacod, assigneth goneroment to the Aribe of suda, and where he telleth before of the calling of the Bentiles, whereof the one came to passe source hundresh pares after, the other almost two thousand pares, these are arguments, that it is God himselfs

that weaketh in the Bokes of Moles

Wilbereas Elay telleth before of the captinitie of the Teines. and their restozing by Cyrus (which was borne an bundreth peres after the beath of Elay, and whereas leremy before the people were led away, appointetotheir erile to continue thee froze and fen væres. Therese leremy and Ezechiell being far billant places the one from the other; boragree in all their fayings . Tabere Daniell telleth of things to come fire bundgets peres after . Thefe are molt certaine profes to effablifb the authoritie of the Bokes of the Prophets. The Amplicitie of the spechof the first the Guangelists, contaying beauenly miste ries, the prayle of John thundering from on high with watch tie fentences, the beauenty Waiestie thining in the waitings of Perer and Paule, the fodaine calling of Mathew from the recett of cultome, the calling of Peter and lohn fromthe fither bouts, to the preaching of the Copell, the convertion anneal ling of Paule, being an enemie to the Apollefoth, are lighes of the holie Choft weaking in them. The content offe many ages, of folundite Pations, and of lo biners mines, in embiaring the Scriptures, and the rare godlineffe of foure ought to establish the authoritie thereof among be. Also the blood of to many

many Parties, which to the confession thereof have luffered beath touth a constant and lover scale, are bedoubted testimo

nies of the truth and authoritie of the Scripfures.

Themiracles that Moles recounted, are lufficient to per financies, that Con, yea, the Goo of Boalles, fet bowne the Seriptures: For this that he was carried in a cloud bo into the Mountains : that there even unto the fortieth bay be continued without the company of men . That in the very publishing of the Lawe, his face Did fhine as it were belet with the Sunne beames, that lightnings flather round about, that thumber and noifes were each where hears in the aire, that a Erumpet found bed, being not founded with any mouth of man. What the entry of the Tabernacle by a cloud fet betwene, was kept from the fight of the people, that his authoritie was to miraculouflie reuenged with the boarible befraction of Corah, Dathan, and Abiron, and all that wicker faction, that the Horke Broken with a rob , bio by and by poure forth a Miner . that at his prayer it raines Manna from Beauen. Die not Goo berein comment him from beauen as an undoubted Prophet.

Aniochus, which commanded all the Bokes to be burned: heerein Cons singular providence is sene, which buth alwayes kept his wind, both from the mightie that they could not extinguish the same, and from the mightie that they could not extinguish the same, and from the malitions, that they could never diminish it. There were divers copies which God of his great guodiesse had kept from the blodie proclamation of Aniochus, and by and by fall lowed the translating of them into Greece, that they might be published but the whole world. The Debrue congue lay not onely buestiemed, but almost withnowne, and surely had it not beine Gods will to have his Keligion provided so, it had altre

gether perrithed.

Thou feet Acticos, howe the forciptures come from the mouth of Gab, and are written by the finger of the holy Chall in the conficiences of the faithfull. But if thou he so curious to alke other questions, of so quarrellous to strine against the truth, amust aunswere they as an also father aunswered a

gnaog

poding foole, which mides thouls thu the while Date bet fore his mane Beauten poto toffort his Caper Bette for furticini ous inquisitours of Boos fecrets; tobate wife withe in inst to be commishended s for who is his that can measure the wind. or mais the fire , or attayne bate the Unfearchable modernments of the Land ? Belives this, where the holy Whall hart realed to let potine ; there ought werd chare to enquire, failing we have the fufficiencie of our falnation contamined in hold Derinture) at were an abluroitie in Scholes, if one being band with a place of Arifforle, could find none other thiff to adolded blank! thomas boubting whether Arifford Traile finds worded on all Shall it then, be tollerable to venythe Sertingees Thanke its other colour to audioe an incongenience, but by caubting the ther they proceeds from the boly Chot ? But that fire boubts arife among many in our age ; the reafontisy their little faith. not the fufficient profest the fameurint as way fon wand & and

Thou mant as for il Dematino ; Golvery undere halle is be white, of blackey blackey and why it house the railse white beat ther then greene . Suit groffe quellions are to be aniffmeren with flember realous, and fuch tole heads thousand leoffer with able aunifiveres. De that bath no motion of Booth Weating. no failing of the spirit, no tall of beinesty tunide; wat washing confitence, no sparke of cale; is tather to be communitied by the ments then realons, for it is an entakit and infallists figure that the holy Chos buty not feales his confetence, whereby he might crie Abba Father, 4 couls allenoge Serioture to prome that the goody flouds refraine from the company of the within inhich although thou will not believe , yet will it combonine this . So. Paule faith, 3 beftre you brethreit, that you ablfaire from the company of those that walk inspinatty. Againe. 999 Conne, if finners thall flatter ther, give no eare bitto them, flie from the smill and suilt fealt flie frontibes del , 950mil

And furely, were it not to conditally vereffable Decelle, and bring the felt might be to fometall of the hole. Diol, I would abandon all place of the above, for I found the grains accurate whereauthou kandell: Day spiriting are to monifrous.

163

that Kranust tell inhether than will raft a apulle, also inhether thou haus a foule, or no, to hich if thouses. I means not to wall wind in proving that to hich thine infidelitie will not permit that to believe, for if thou halt as yet felt no talk of the spirit working in the, then fure I am, that to prove the immortality of the foule were bottlesse; if thou have a ferret fixling, then it were niceless. And Son grant the that glowing and fring in conscience, that the foule may witnes to the selfe that there is a living God, and the hart her drops of blod as a token of repertance, in that thou half senied that Cod, and so I commit the to God, and that which I cannot doe with any persuadion, I will not leave to afternot with my praper.

perplered with feare, subout thou may kindke perfect by faith; for many A and brought into such a bouble and boubtfull distress, that A know not bow to survey, if A believe not the Societures, that A know not bow to survey, if A believe not the Societures, then Sold A be suppressed to whelefee I if A believe them; then that A be consumed for my wicked life. A know the subole course of the Bible, subjected A found believe, then mad A allo believe that A am an abred. For thus faith their to biodisonnes: If man summagains man, who carefurginess, if against Sobjeto shall intreas forpine, the that summeth, as of the benefit the respect of since is reach, then people, and hang their against the sounce on Sibbets, that my anger may be turned from the sold these sounce on Sibbets, that my anger may be turned from the sold these sounce on Sibbets, that my anger may be turned from the sold these sounce on Sibbets, that my anger may be turned from the sold these sounces of holio societure cause me to tremble and shall in anery summed of both society and many anger may be turned from the sold these sounces of sold and many anger may be turned and shall in anery summed and many and a summed and shall in anery summed and many and a summed and shall in anery summed and shall in anery summed and shall in anery summed and summed and shall such a summed and shall sha

Againe this faith the haly withle, poin that the firme fall byon the, for four half times, behold a am a curse before you to bay, if you half not beathen to the commandements of the half, all they that have forfalsen the law shall be confounded. Furthermore, where thesats are pourte out against simers, my hart blanch in my bello to remember them.

A will came into youin indgement, layfithe Lozd, and A toill be a fivificand a levery witnesse; and retayned the bane committed perturies, and retayned the butter

#### Euphnes and Atheds

of hirelings, oppredently beloddines, milited the Rearges, and those that bane not feared me the Love of Hoaks, Dutoffies month that come a two coped two do.

Behold I come quickly, and being my retund heithines

Oreat is the bay of the Lord, and terrible, and to hote he that can abide him? What then shall I thander, twhen the Lord thall artie to indge, and when he shall be mauno, to has shall answer ? Besides this the names that in holy socripture are attributed to God, bring a terrour of my guiltic continues of the is says to be a terrible won, a God of renenge, to hole being is like the thunder, twhose breath maketh all the corners of the sarth to shake and tremble.

There things Explains tellifie but a the confrience, that if there he a \$\mathcal{O}\$ D., heristhe \$\mathcal{O}\$ but of the rightenis, anatoms that will conform the docked. The then therefore find \$\mathcal{O}\$ goe, as inho may analyze the raise of very sance is former \$\mathcal{A}\$ goe to be seen, that is how teste: If into the earth, that is his too tellifies, if into the people, there her is also. This is an that the him that the \$\mathcal{A}\$ is the first one him him that the \$\mathcal{A}\$ and the people lyke heir too and that he confirmed.

Emphyes. Although I count, but resigned to hears theires impivilence a God, yet must I need lament to fethe faminely visited him. The poult that roaring A confering his pody to be taken out of his falves, alleader him is confering that may concerne the single-yearing all out that should comfert the sorosufull. Puch like into the peccutall Philition, which recounted all things that may endounge the Patient, never telling any thing that may recove himself of their also and all in must be seen as a string any thing that may recove himself of their also and all their also are the seen as a second all their also are their also are their also are the second and all their also are their al

Let not the configure be agreened but with a pentient hard renounceall the former iniquities, and thou that receive etermall life. After the felte, that as Cooks a Look to be is a factor, as there is a many in he is a factor, as there is a many in the case of the cooks at the c

inherather Arite payhome, get hath he leavenfeite inhich are as flowe to wiredake a finner. Heare therefore the greatest comfort flowing in enericetrate and lyne of the Scripture, if thombe neutented you maked one, glicking and be of order?

I my felfe mm enter her imbir both blot out his transgred fionis andthat for mitte ownerfakes End 3 will mit beminofull of the Ginzen Behold, the Hordes band is not forther that it manafifuses weither his eare beamis, that it cannot beare Unit our anies were as Crimolin; they half be mand achiter then ciolor and thereis they were as red as freitet? they that he mine like tibite mott: Afere confesto our offenens, he to feit bi full and inft a fo that he hould former be our flames . Con hat not appointed by buto bozath, but butd faluations 15 the means deir Amai Beine Chaile the earth in filter with the morcie of the Hope. It is northe will of Boar Pather Lobich is in Demeni Chatallyane wither little and Maulb petrillip Cools rich in mercie. A toilbrook the veath of a Mittely layth the Loss Con returne and leur. Les Somie d'angireature not re veliede, but tuitme. Sabjathaberried mult, because pe can vellel. Coris meristalt, ting tillesting, anous misch metie. If speciment speci firmer! Thou halt uge the neath; pot if his poperis arre to inflice. fowlengen Gob, pet mult 3 nebe iament teger ben theft wil or Satists the minus the greated indinesses Scotte breathis the this amendar considing and bis Dalmenijeha. Social toneathe wester that he must his onety begutten to onne, that toboliener belandbir him might net pereilb, but baie egerla King tife. Doo biffrier and the Counter things the world this that the world might be fauld by him? Em the Apother faith the disputety to get the child of her wound; the though the be to immaturalt? Decivitl Anot be busingfull of the . In personal be in the copy in hearies for the represented the Annier. Then for winner and nine in hearings a conferment layer This Parcial the right country which was more than the representative. mbett

we have an advocate with the Father, Jelus Christ the righted ous, he is the propitiation for our sinnes, and not for our sinnes onely, but for the sinnes of the whole world. I write but o you little children, because your sinnes be forginen, for his name lake. Doth not Christ say, that whatsoever we shall aske the Father in his name, we shall obtaine? Doth not GD D say: This is my beloved Some in whom Jam well pleased,

beare him?

I have read of Themistocles, which having offended Philip the Bing of Macedonia, and could no way appeale his ancer! meting his young Sonne Alexander, toke him in his armes and met Philip in the face: Philip faing the fmiling counter nance of the chilo, was well pleased with Themistocles. Quen to, if through the manifold finnes and harnous offences, then pronoke the heavy displeasure of thy God, informet as thou thalt tremble for horrour, take his onely begotten and welbeloued Sonne Jefus in thine armes . and then be neither can oz will be angrie with the . If thou haue benied the Bob, vet if thou goe cut with Perer and we've bitterly, God will not beme thee. Though with the probleall Sonne thou wallelo in thine owne wilfulnes, petif thou returne againe forowfull, thou thalt be received. Afthou be a granous offender, vet if theu come buto Chaift with the woman in Luke, and wath his fate with the teares, thou half obtaine remillion, 111 3012 901

Lonfider with thy felfe the great love of Chaiff, and the biffer to iments that he endured for thy take, which was inforced through the borrour of death, to crie with a loude voice, Eldi, Eldi, lamafabathani, Hy Cod, My Cod, why half thou forfaken me, and with a groaning spirit to say, My soule is heavie unto the death, tarry here and watch: and againe, father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me. Remember how he was crowned with thomes, crucified with themes, scourged and hanged so, thy salvation, how he sweat water and blod so; thy remission, how he indured even the topments of the damned spirits so, thy redemption, how he overcame death, that thou houldest not die, how he conquered the denill that thou migh-

\$.

tell not be dammed. When thou thalt record inhat he half done to purchase the freedome, how canst thou dread bondage? When thou shalt behold the agonies and anguish of mind that he suffered for the sake, howe canst thou doubt of the release of the soule? When the Sautour shall be the Judge, whe should be thou tremble to heare of indgement? When thou hast a continual Peviatour with God the Father, howe canst thou

Diffruft of his fauour.

Turne therfore onto Christ with a willing bart, and a wailing minde for thy effences, who hath promiled, that at what timelo euer a finner repenteth bim of his finnes , bee thall be forginen: who calleth all those that are beanie laben, that they might be refreshed : who is the doze to them that knocke, the way to them that lake, the truth, the rock, the corner frome, the fulneffe of time, it is be that can and will poure Dyle into the wounds. The absolued Mary Magdalen from her finnes, but Chailt ? Wabo forgaue the thefe his robberg and manllaughter, but Christ . Tonbo made Mathew the Bublican e tolegatherer, an Apollie and Beacher, but Chaift ? Witho is that god then beard that fetcheth home the fray there to louingly boon bis thoulders, but Chrift : Who received home the lot bon, was it not Chaift ? Who made of Soule a perfecuter, Paule an Apoffle. was it not Chailt ; 3 paffe ouer biners other Diffozies both of the old a new Aestament, which be abundantly beclare what great comfort the faithfull penitent finners bane al twates bab in bearing the comfortable promiles of Cobs mercy . Canff then then Acheos, diffrust the Chaift, who reiopceth at the repentance : Affurethy felfe, that through his paffion and blob theb. Ding, Death hath loll bis fling, the benill bis bidozy, and that the gates of bell thall not prenatte againft the. Let not therfore that blod of Chaift be thed in baine, by thine obstinate and bard bart. Let this persivation reft in the, that thou thalt receive abo Colution freely, and then thatt thou feele thy Coule euen as it were to bunger and thirft after righteoufnes.

Atheos. Well Euphues, fering the holy Choft hath mate the a meane to make me a man (for before the tall of the Copiel

was worfe then a beath) I hope the same spirit will also lighten my conscience with his word, and construce it to the end in constancie, that I may not onely consesse my Christ faithfully, but also preach him freely, that I may not only be a Minister of his

wood, but alfo a Partir foz it, if it be his pleafure.

D Euphues, bowe much am I bound to the godneffe of almightie DD, which hath made me of an Infidell a beles ner, of a calt-away a Chillian, of an Beathenlie Bagan, a heauenlie Protestant . D howe comfortable is the feeling and talt of grace, howe toyfull are the glad tybings of the Cofpell, the faythfull promites of faluation, the free recemption of the fonle . I will endeuour by all meanes to confute those barnnas ble. I knowe not by what name to tearme them, but blafphe, mers 7 am fure, which if they be no moze, certainely they can be no leffe. I fee nowe the odds betweene light and barkneffe. farth and frowar oneffe, Chaift and Beliall. Bethon Euphues a witnesse of my fayth, fæing thou bast beene the instrument of my beliefe, and I will pany that I thewe it in my lyfe, as for the Taccount my felfe fo much in thy bebt, as Thall never be able with the loffe of my lyfe to render the thy due : but God which rewardeth the seale of all men, will I hope bleffe thee, and I will man for thee.

Euphues. D Atheos, little is the bebt thou owest me, but great is the comfort I have received by the. Give the praise to God, whose godnes hath made the a member of the mistical body of Christ, and not onely a brother with his Sonne, but also

coberitour with thy Sautour.

There is no hart to hard, no Deathen to obitinate, do mitere, ant or Infibell to impious, that by grace is not made as supply

as Dyle, as tradable as a thepe, as faithfull as any.

The Asamant though it be so hard that nothing can bruse it, yet if the warme blod of a Goate be poured byon it, it bursteth: Quen so although the hart of the Atheist and unbelauer be so hard, that negther reward nor revenue can mollisse it, so stout, that no persuation can breake it: yet if the grace of God purchased by the blood of Christ, do but once touch it, it renteth in some finder.

#### Letters of Euphues.

funder, and is enforced to acknowledge an omnipotent and everlatting lehouah? Let us therefore both (Atheos I will not now call the, but Theophilus) flie unto that Christ which hath through his mercy, not our merrits, purchased for us the inheritance of everlatting life.

# Certaine Letters writ by Euphues

Euphues to Philautus.

If the course of youth had any respect to the finste of age, at the liming man any regard to the dying mould, we would with greater care, when we were young, shunne those things which should greate be when we be old: and with more fense.

ritie direct the lequele of our lyfe, to, feare of prefent death. But such is either the unhappines of mans condition, or the unto-wardness of his croked pature, or the wisfulness of his mind, or the blindness of his hart, that in youth he surfetteth with delights, preventing age: or if he live, continueth in botage, forgetting death. It is a world to see, how in our sourcibing time, when we best may, we be worst willing to thrive: and how in the bading of our dates, when we most should, we have least desire to remember our end.

Thou wilt muse Philaurus, to heare Euphies preach, who of late had more minds to serve his Lady, then to worthip his Lood. Ah Philaurus, then art nows a Courtier in Iraly, Ja Scholler in Arhens: and as hard it is sor the to follows good counsaile, as so, me to entorce they, seeing in the there is little will to amend, and in me lesse authoritie to commaund, yet will Jerhort the as a friend, I would I might compell the as a father. But I have heard, that it is peculiar to an Italian to kand in his owner conceite, and to a Courtier never to be controld.

#### Letters of Euphues.

controld, which cauleth me to feare that in thee, which I lament in others. That is, that either thou feeme to wife in thine owne opinion , thinking fcome to be taught , of two wilde in the attempts, in rejecting admonifiment. The one proceedeth of felf. lone, and fo thy name importeth : the other of mere folly and that the nature the weth: thou lokelt I thould crave pardon for fpeaking fe boldly . Ro Philaurus, I meane not to flatter the. to, then I Sould incurre the Culpition of fraud . Reither am 4 betermined to fall out with the , for then might the wife cons uince me of folly. But thou art in great credite in the Court, and what then ? Mall thy credite with the Emperour abate my courage to my God ? De thy hantie lokes ouench my kindled loue ! De thy gallant their allake my and will ! Dath the Cours tier any prerogative above the Clowner who he fould not be reprehended ! Doth his bigh calling not onely give him a coms million to linne, but remillion also if he offend? Doth his pres beminence in the Court, warrant him to omzeffe the poise by micht, oz acquite him of vanishment ? Qo Philaunis. By bow much the moze thou excelled other in benours the formuch the more thou oughteft to ercebe them in boneflie: and the bigher thy calling is, the better ought thy confcience tobe : and as far it befemetha Bentleman to be from pribe, as be is from pouers tie: and as neere to gentlenes in condition, as he is in blood: But & will befrend with the to particulars.

It is here reported to, a truth, that Philamus hath given over himselfe to all deliciousnes, desiring rather to be pandled in the laps of Ladies, then bused in the sudie of god Letters: And I would this were all, which is to much, or the rest alve, which is to monstrous. It is now in every mans mouth, that thou, yea, thou Philamus, art to voice of curteste, that thou hast almost forgotten common sence and humaniste, having neither care of Religion (a thing to common in a Courtier) neither regard of honestic or any vertuous behaviour. Described thou live as thou should never die, and laugh as thou should best never mourne, art thouse simple that thou voes not know from whence thou camest, or so sinfull, that thou cares not

#### Letters of Euphues.

whether thou goest: what is in the that should make the so fecure, or what can there be in any that may cause him to glory? Milo that great Wrastler began to wape, when he sawe his armes brawne-sallen and weake, saying: Stength, strength, is but vaine. Helene in her newe glasse, viewing her olde face, with simpling countenaunce, cryed: Beautie where is

thy blase.

Crocius with all bis wealth, Arifforle with all his wit, all men with all their wiscome, baue and thall perrit and turns to bult. But thou belightelt to haue the new falhion, the Some nith felt, the french Ruffe, thy crew of Ruffians, all thine attire mifhapen to make the a Monfter, and all thy time mif pent to theire the unhappie : Wilhat thould I one about to be cipher thy lyfe, feeing thy beginning theweth the ente to be naught. Art not thou one of thele Philaurus, which feekelt to winne credite with the fuperious by flatterie, and wing out wealth from thy inferious by force, and undermine thy equals by fraude ? Doeft thou not make the Court, not onely a couer to befend thy felfe from beang : but a colour also to commit in force . Art not thou one of those, that having gotten on they? liene the Cognifaunce of a Courtier, hauing haken from thy Chirtes the regard of curtelle . I cannot but lament (I would I might remedie) the great abuses that raigne in the eyes of the Emperour . I feare mee the Boet fapth too trulie . Excat aula qui vule effe pius, virtus & fumma potestas non coeunt. As not vietie turned all to pollicie, farth to forelight, right to inffice : both not be best thrive that work beferueth, and be rule all the Country that bath no confeience. Doth not the Emperours Court grow to this infolent blindnes, that all that fee not their follie, they account foles : all that fpeake against it, prerife : laughing at the fimplicitie of the one, and threatning the bolones of the other. Philaurus, if thou wouldest with our con-Aderation way, howe farre a Courtiers lyfe is from a found belæfe, thou wouldelt eyther frame thy felfe to a newe trade, oz elfe amend thine old manners, yea, thou wouldeft with Crates leave all the polletions, taking the Bokes e trubae to Athens. anb

and with Anaxagoras, befule wealth, to attaine wifedome; if thou haddelt as great respect to ope well, as thou hast care to line wantonly, thou shouldest with Socrates sieke howe thou mightest yell to death, rather then with Aristippus search how

to prolong thy life.

Doeft thou not knowe that where the tree falleth, there it lyeth? and enery ones deaths day, is his domes day? That the whole course oflyse is but a meditation of death, a pilgrimage, a warfare. Hast thou not read, or doest thou not regard what is written, that we shall all be cited before the Tribunall seate of God, to render a straight account of our sewardhip; If then the reward be to be measured by the merits, what bote canst thou seeke so, but eternall paine, which here linest in continuall pleasure. So shouldest thou line as thou mayst dye, and then shalt thou die to line.

Mert thou as ftrong as Sampson, as wyle as Salomon, as holie as Dauid, as faythfull as Abraham, as zealous as Moses, as good as anie that ever lyved, yet halt thou due as they have bone, but not rife agains to lyfe with them, wheffe thou

line as they bib.

But then wilt say, that no man ought to indge the conscience but the selfe, swing then knowest it better then any. Deliautus, if then learch the selfe and sind not sinne, then is the case almost cureleste. The Patient, if Philitions are to be credited, and common experience estimated, is the nærest death when he thinketh himselfe past his disease, and the lesse greefe he sæleth; the greater sits he endureth, the wound that is not searched because it a little smarteth, is fullest of dead self, and the somerit shinnesth, the sozer it sestereth.

It is fayde, that Ahunder baufeth the free, but breaketh not the Barke, and pearceth the blade, and never hurteth the Scabbard: even to both finne wound the hart, but never hurt the eyes, and infect the foule, though outwardlie it nothing af

flict the boote.

Descend therefore into thine owne conscience, confesse thy sinnes, reforme the manners, contemne the world, embrace Chaise.

Chaiff, leave the Court, follow thy fluop, prefer holines before honour, honeftie before promotion, Religion and bpzightnes of life, befoze the over-lafting befires of the fieth : remember the Be, which out of the brieft and bittereft Time, fucketh moift and (wet bonney . And if thou canft, out of the Court, a place of more pomp then pietie, fucke out the true inice of perfection, but if thou fee in the felfe a will rather to noe forward, if the atiffering face of faire Labies, or the glittering them of luftie gallants, or courtly fare, or any belicate thing, fame to entice the to farther lewones, come from the Court to Athens, and fo in thunning the causes of enill, thou thait fone escape the effect of thy mil fortune, the more thole things pleafe the , the more they bilpleafest Gob, and the greater wibe thou takeft in finne, the greater paine thou heapest to thy foule. Cramine thine own conscience, and se whether thou hall done as is required: if thou have, thank the Lozd, and pray for increase of grace, if not, befire Boo to give the a willing mind to attaine faith and con-Cancie to continue to the end. Wi consider and a conges as

#### Euphues to Eubulus.

Salute the in the Loss, se. Although I was not to wittie to follow the grave advice when I fire knew the, set doe I not tack grace to give the that is fines I tried the . And if

I were as able to perfuse the to patience, as then wert believes to exhort me to pietie, of as wife to comfort the in thine age, as thou willing to intruct me in my youth, then shoulded now with less griefe endure thy late tolle, and with little care leave thy aged lyfe.

Then weeped to; the beath of the Daughter, and I laugh at the folly of the Father, for greater vanitie is there in the mind of the mourner, then bitternes in the beath of the vecea. Od. But the was amiable, but yet finfull, but the was young and might have lived, but the was mortall and must have beed. I but her youth made the often merry. I but thin age thould once make the wife; I but her graine yeares were waste to neath.

beath, I but the house haires should be pite life. Innotness thou not knowles, that life is the gift of God, beath the bue of parture, as were receive the one as a benefit, so must we abide the other of necessitie. White men have sounde that by learning, subjet older men should know by experience, that in life there is nothing swatz, indeath nothing source. The philosophers accounted it the chiefest selicitie menento bee bodnes; the second, source to be? And what hat beath in it so hard, that were should take it so heavily? Init what hat beath in it so hard, that were should take it so heavily? I sittly ange to be that cut off, which by nature is made to be ent off? D2 that melted, which is sitte to bee melted? D2 that burnit, which is apt to be burnit? D2 man to have should have been, and yet are thou so provided that she is seade? I noth so a many seconds of made and a second she is seade? I noth so a many seconds.

as neither her that fingeth most or prayeth longest, or ruleth the steams oftenost, but her that couth it dest beforeouth greatest prayet; for the steams oftenost, but her that not yeares, but many bectuening herhat hath grayes flates; but greatest growns in including principles to be, and that hath nost yeares; but many bectuening herhat hath grayes flates; but greatest growns including of many dates, but in the using of verticus browns. Among plants; those he best elecanes, that in the petitions brings of much fruite. Been of the fairest noboers gathered when they be freshed? The youngest Beates killed to; facrifice, because they be finest? The measure of life is not length, but honestie, neither but we enterdate like, to the end we should set bowne the day of our death, but thesese do we live, that we may obey him that made do, and be willing to dye whensoever her shall call been death of the stage 
falt, but that then half gone too flow neither ought it to green thee that thee is gone to her home with a fewe years, but that thou art to me with many.

But why goe a about to ble a long morette to a little win pole : The bud is blaften as foone as the blowne Rafe, the wind thateto of the blofforme as well as the fruiter Abath neither functo the golden locks not the honriebrahands of the common In I meane not to make a Treatife in the praife of weathwhat to note the necellitie; neither to write lohat joyes the priceine that die, but to theire what paynes they endure that line and thou which art suem in the mane of the life, inhom pature hath nourifhed folong, that mein thee beginneth to not, may well know what griefen, inhatlabours, what painen grein age, and get wouldeft be either goung to endure many, og elber to bite more. But then thinkell it herontable to goe to the grane with a gray beat, but I beense it more glozious to be buried mith an honest name. Age layest them, is the blesling of Can's petales messenger of neath. Descend therefore into these cipus conscip ence, confiner the goometic that commetly by the end, and the batterie which was by the beginning. Lake the death of the Danghter patiently, and lache for thine clone spently, to that thou performe both the office of an boneft man, and the honom truch fruite. The not the falled graf of and fraite department befreihofte The poungour iseafted hiller for hariffire, by ande

they be fined : Elbe meading of increased and page of the manufactured of the first 
Dane received the Letters, and thou half deceived mine appoint for thou feetwell to take mane thought for the lotte of an harlot; then the life of an honeth woman . Thou with tell that specives haveful inder trade; and thameless in bet end. I believe thee tit is no merualle that he tokish king practice sinne, should bying be boyde of spame, meither coales there he my great hope of repentance at the hours of weath tohere there was no regard of male reputation in time of life.

These was firsten submaintle, beeing troubled with no sickness. It may bee, so, it is commonlie seens, that a sinfull life is re-warned with a subvaine beath, and a sweet beginning, with a sower end.

Thom addell moreover, that thee beeing in great credite with the States, died in great beggery in the Arats. Certes it is an old faging: That to be collinated in the Court, thall ove in the Aratu, thee hoped there by delights to gains money, and by her befores, purchased miserie, they that leeke to clime by private since, thall fall with open thame, and they that court to them in vice, Mall fincke in bamities to their owne verrils.

Thou fayed, that for beautic the was the Helen of Greece, and 3 burff fiveare, that for beautic thee might be the monster of lealie. In my minde, greater is the chame to be accounted an horlot, then the prayle to bee effectived amiable. But where thou art in the Court, there is more regards of beautic then of houstlie, and more are theplanusited that die viciously, then they lourd that line verticously: for thou ganest as it were a sigh, which all the companions in the Court feeme by thee to found also, that Lucilla becing one of so great perfection in all parts of her body, and so little pietic in the souls, shoulde be as it were snatched out of the lawes of so many young Gentlemen. Well Philaurus, thou takes not so much care so, the loss of her, as 3 grieve so, they lewonesse: neyther canst thou so, rows under these her dye submittally, then 3 to heare they lyne shamestally.

If thou means to keeps mee as a Arinde, thake off thole bains topes and baliance with momen, believe mee Philaurus, I speaks it with salteares erickling downer my checkes, the life thousand in the Court, is not less abhores then the with headeath of kycille beteken, and mare artithous counce for thy folly, then thee bates for her filthings.

The suil end of Lucilla, thoulde moone the to beginne a neive life: I have often warned there to thin the monted trade, and if thou ione me as thou protested in the Letters, then leave althy vices, and the we it in the life. If thou means not to dishere

amend thy mantiers, I believ thee to write no more to meethe I will matther aumfwere thee; noz reade them. The Tennet is as foone broken with a want as with the fourre : a Bentleman

as well allured with a word, as with a finord.

Thou concludeft in the end that Linia is fick : truclie 3 am force, for fire is a mayben of no lefte contines then modeffie? and hard if is to indge, whether thee beferies more brayle for her beautic with the amozons, or domiration for her bonelly of the bertuous : if thou love me, embrace her for the is able both to fatif fie thing eye for chorce, and infirmet the bart with learning. Commend met buto ber, and as 3 prayle ber to thee, fo will I pray for her to God, that either the may have patience to endure her trouble, og beligerance to cleape her pertille & dis

Thou befireft mee to fende thee the Bermens which were preached of late in Athens, I have fulfilled the requelle but 3 feare me thou wilt ble them as to. George with his horle, who is ever on his backe, but never riveth : but if thou wert as wib ling to reade them, as 3 was to fend them, as as ready to follow them; as belirous to have them, it that not repent the of the labour, not me of my coll. And thus fare well, dell olla della

> Euphues to Botonio to take his exile parientlie, al med Tennolide Halls her, as & griene for the fewenelle



The warmen of I were as wife to mine thee connected as a am willing to boe thee good, or as able to let thee at libertie, as beffrous to bane thee free, thou thouldell neither want good abute to quite thee. nos fufficient belie to reflore thees Chou takel

it heavilie, that then Bouldeft be actufed without colour, an banished without cause : and a thinke thee happy to be to well ribbe of the Court, and be lo bopbe offring and and in 1 . 113

Thou favelt banishment is bitter to the free borne, and 3 Deeme it the better, if thou be without blame. There be mante meates which are fower in the month, and that in the maw, but if thou mingle them with fwest famces they will be both a pleafant

### Lesters of Ruphues. !

deafailfeadh ann bhalafaine noiri fhrienta i Ditierte colines Cerrothenistal type family moens among them 4 in fetter the fight. I weakerthis to this erio, that though the erite ferme grees none to the core fourthing the felte in the fier whe of Abiloft the it ihali bemoge tollenable : het hat id colo. both met coper buri felfe with care duit with clothesis and that is illafferent the rated beyord himfelfe by the fire, not by his fancter a who thou which art banifbeb, on the first not anith tear es to believe the bars but felling in the buf, and twing the trud after beat at mills Bafure hath given toman a Country, no more then the distin boufe of tands, of livings. Socrates would neither call himfeld an Achenian neithera Gretian, bittia dittistant the worlde. Plato month mener account him tamilbed; that hab the Burting Agre, Belgien, and Carth, that he handeloses langue he with the Mintera blaft and the Sommern blage glibbelent fantelbur and the fame Moone thined; whereby be motel, that every place has a Country to a wife man, and al parts a Wallace to a quiet Collien thou had not one place athence therein to la souice middlest their authorisen outrof blaples, that is not birelicall the Achenians Divell notin Callingra has receiv Goriathianth Wise cia not all the Lacedemordans in Pirania. Both can alve prove the world be diffant farre from the other, twice an the counties maticians fette before, that the enish is but a popul being conf ther peruert inflice, of incurre bifulealure ansured aft of dame Learne of the Ber as hoel to anther Donny of the whole as the flower, and mit offer Countries to tipe, as well as in thins owne. De is to be laughed at, which thinketh that Woone bet ter at Arbens then at Corinth wathe Bonnie of the Bei Cheeter that is gathered in Hyblia, then that which is made in Minimal Withen it was cast in Diogenes toth, that the Sinoponeres has banithen bim Ponnis, yea (laibbe) Ithem of Diogenies I may fay to thee, as Seraconicus faibe to bis meet - who dernaunben lobat fault was punified with exile, and he aunf pering, fall bood, why then fait Straconicus book not thou planife beseited

**亚**3.

to the ende thou maift anoide the milchiefes that flowe in the

Countries de profesione de forme l'action de collection

amiliod invely, if conference to the marin fide and distribed the Count; Faccount ther wife in being superthet the thing of between the face of vice. Wester it is for the face of the character with honour in the Count, and greater will the pasife have living benitivitien the Count, and greater will the pasife have living benitivitien the place in the pasife will make it the Countrie, appear beautiful to this make it make it the Countrie, appear beautiful to the will be the falling in the built, and feeing the figure of the chare perfect in the local throw Countries the two Countries the falling in the built, and feeing the figure the two leverth, and fee built little for wether of hour seems of a point to a countries that

Zeno hearing that his onely Barke subrrein all his wealth enas ibipper da bent pendihevioryedout: A hou but vonte wel Krefine to there recording grants agains ancembrace ibips ben Thropbolicherfozelierum mind geraticable to relogie, God, by providment hath tampelled theofo firiduelle of the lighter by libertie might have beine growen to telubnelle Withen thou hall not one place aftianed thee therein to live but ons furbiblies there; turich thologoristic envisions their being venter but one; that except an thousand about any operaner. this affecte initiathe felfe, I bear and affice, interesti Ashould perfor feare plante the Mobile son for waite opingede the need Die. Fam no Arbitrer in bouldfall rules, twhere by I thould be a ther peruert inflice, az incurre bifpleafure. I amifra from the injuries of the firong. and malitiof the weaker amout of the broples of the febitions, but have effaven the threats of the amis bitious. But an hethat maint a faire Dechard, feing buetrie blaffed, recounteth the bill of modifie of that; atto paffethouse in filence the fruitfulnefle of the other. So be that is bandhed. both alway lament the tolle of his boufe, and the thatne of his exile, not reiopring at the libertie, quietneffe, and pleafine that be iniopeth by that finit punifment andoon ? an callot ga

The kings of Persia were becmed happy, in that they passed them Minter in Babylon, in Media their Sommer, and the laying in Sulis. And certainly the erile in this may be as happie, as any king in Persia, so, be may at his leasure beginne his

#### Letters of Euphuen I

ofone pleature, leave his Winter in Athens, his Sommer in Naples, his Spring in Argos. But if hee have any bufmeffe in hand, he may trubic without trouble, fleepe without care, and tooke at his will without controllement.

Arritorie mun bine when it pleafeth Phillip, Diogenes when it lufteth Diogenes, the Contrier Juppeth when the hing is fatil feb, but Botonio may notwarite inben Botonio is an but gred. But thou faylt that banishment is chamefull. Po truely, no anne their pointies to the contests, by grap haires to the deces. It is the caulithat makery theedpame; if thou were bandly byon choice, greateris the credit in distaining weater a the ne ememicadin comunication internets and delle theme is that e co be appreciately unightly then theirs that desirable is to thatice a builtime fear elation finite not thins to infrance past tion, certainly thou are more affain then parts on he will be a in Who idine free groweth an fagre in Plainsons in Ida, the Aightingalesingsth and weteringhe idoparts with the thirteen Of Control Who both mant theth as theth at the of Chantel net für ender set muchattier Atin position of the person that amicrobithe literal makes with the therefore Borotio, that all the foes in apt so, univility to a banground lobere no flower will grow, that is a wife with Lande are as fertill as his white arbearing temper the flarencies of the best flucted that the coule, and to meadure the electronelle of the ence with the fright of thine memica quartell, to shall nonge thy malice with patience, and endure thy bin Concustations Orner by bedeered with a returned of the

thine benefite, that as their challenged to be nonly to blacke. frenching affection noble to the first of section in the first than burg like a blatt among the fetre blottene, and like a faire in appear of waite Latine. Ale Role that is enten with the cents theristal catheren, because to growth on that thating there the Musicario, mather than elelen made a Etarre becaute fine comes, bat Eggewith Callon, no, thou a Confirmula in that

#### Laurkof Baphaes. I

of the gleasure, leave his colinter in Advens, his sommer in New Jersey and the Colinter in Advens, his colonial in the plane and in the leave of the colonial in the color in the c

if utieth Dingeres, the widness Vipile deuben the lining is take it; but occosionary and with the base is not a consistent occosionary and with the base is the constant of th

And hould talke in wood of those things which hate to conferre with thee in wiftings, corten then troubest blink for thanse, and I forepe for Win mathemat, which day having gan fance houte Lotely modeffice neyther could thing kares licare that without along ing, which mine eyes can haraly bie to without priete. Ah wil cins, Francottell whether & Moula lament in the the want of learning probes wanter limited in the one then wit infertiling all usen, in the other, felicatons to all beatts. Holomus has jobe Cotto the hell-levity automarketh tile braward spills innerines day that he neverthin ferdiscord earning in thy obinged discordiscs of the Dentrie, unaly about walk made a Gertleman before their tife west to hat We meent, and more half them to boull of the fronk then hiding left childy hard mher, beath a beggit the his fol-distinct began in their Ainections, and anothin thee, on Anneunfile that they grained by bertacy flood half broke uenge thy malice will patience, and endure thesid third est

If thou claime Gentrie by pedegree, practife gentlinette by thine honestie, that as thou challengest to be noble by bloode, thou mall also prove noble by knowledge: otherwise shall thou hang like a blass among thy faire blossoms, and like a staine in a piece of white Lawne. The Rose that is eaten with the canker is not gathered, because it groweth on that stalke that the sweet ooth, neither was Helen made a Staire because shee came of that Egge with Castor, nor thou a Gentleman in that

thy Aunceltours were of nobilitie.

It is not the descent of birth, but the consent of conditions that maketh Gentlemen, neither great Panoes, but god manners that expecte the true Image of dignitie. There is Copper counce of the Campe that gold is, yet is it not currant: there commeth poylon of the fish as well as god Dyle, yet is it not wholsome, and of man may procede an enill child, and yet no Gentleman. For as the Waine that runneth on the less, is not therefore to be accounted neate, because it was drawne of the same piece: or as the water that springeth from the Fountains head, and sloweth into the filthie channell, is not to be called cleare because it came of the same Greane: so neyther is he that bescendeth of noble parentage, if he differ from noble deces, to be examed a Gentleman in that he issued from the loynes of a noble Sire, for that he obscureth the Parents he came of, and discrediteth his ownerestate.

There is no Gentleman in Athens, but for roweth to fact by behaviour to far to vilagrae from thy birth, for this far they all (which is the chafelf note of a Gentleman) that thou houlded as well defire honeltie in thy life, as honour by thy hinage: that the nature should not swarue from thy name, that as thou by dutie should be regarded for thy progenie, so thou wouldest

endeucur by deferts to be reverenced for thy pietie.

The pure Cozall is chosen as well by his bertue, as his colour: a king is knowne better by his courage then his Crown: a right Gentleman is somer seene by the tryall of his bertue.

then blasing of his armes.

But I let passe thy birth, withing the rather with Villes to thew it in works, then with Aiax to boast of it with words: thy stock shall not be less, but thy modeste the greater. Thou linest in Athens, as the Waspe both among Bees, rather to sting then to gather honney, and thou bealest with most of thy acquaintance as the bogge both in the maunger, who neyther suffereth the Porse to eate hay, nor will himselfe. For thou being idle, will not permit any, (as far as in the lyeth) to be well imployed. Thou art an heire to faire lyning, that is nothing, if thou he disherited of learning: for better were it to that to inherite

inherite righteonlines then riches, and farre more famely were it for the to have the security full of wookes, then the pure full of money. Do get goods is the benefite of Fortune, to kepe them the gyft of wifedome. As therefore them art to possent them by thy Fathers will, to art their to increase them by think owner witte.

But alade why desires thou to have the reveneives of the Parent, and nothing regardes to have his derines where thou by succession to enjoy the Patrimonia, and by vice to obscure his pietie? Will thou have the tytle of his honour, and not touch of his honestie? Ah Alaius, remember that thou art not bosne to line after thine owne lust, but to learne to doe, where he thou may the live after thy death. I have often heard the Father say, and that with a deepe sigh, the teares trickling downs his gray haires, that thy mother never longed mose to have the bosne when she was in travaile, then he to have the dead to rid him of troubles. And not sloome hath thy Pother withed, that eyther her wombe had beene thy grave, of the ground hers. Dea, all thy friends with open mouth desire, that exther Coo will send the grace to amend thy life, of griffs to hasten thy death.

Thou will bemaund of me in what thou doest essend, and a aske the in what thou doest not sinne. Thou swearest then are not conetous, but Hay thou art prodigall, and as much sinnest be that lauisheth without means, as beethat horders without measure. But cank thou creuse thy selfe of vice, in that thou art not conetous? Certainly no more then the murtherer would therfore be guiltlesse because he is no copner. But why goe 3 about to be date reason with the, when thou has no regard of honestie? Though 3 leave here to perswade the, yet will 3 not cease to pray so, the. In the meane season I desire the, yet, and in Dods name 3 commaund the, that is neither the care of thy Parents, whom thou shouldest comfort, nor the counsaile of thy friends, which thou oughtest to seare, nor the authority of the Pagistrate which thou shouldest reverence, can alive the to grace; yet the law of thy Saniour, who hath redemant the, and

the punishment of the Almighty, to be continually the educty the, should be aw the to amendment, other wife as their inicat now in finne, so shall thou die with shame, and remaine with Sathan. From whom he that hath made thee, keepe the.

Liuia from the Emperours Court to Euphues. and a

Fucknesse had not put me to silence, and the weakenesse of my bodie hindered the will-linguesse of my minde, thou shouldest have had a more specie aunswere, and I no cause of excuse. I know it expedient to returns an aunswere, but not necessarie to write in post, for that in things of great importance, we

commonly loke befoze we leave, and where the hart doubt through faintnesse, the hand is inforced to shake through faille nesse. Thou sayest thou understandest howe mentioned the Court, and of me thou desirest to know the estate of women a certes to dissemble with the, were to deceive my selfe, and to cloake the vanitie in Court, were to clog mine owne conscience with vices. The Couplesse keepeth her estate royall, and her Haidens will not lasse an inch of their hono; the endeudzeth to set downe good lawes, and they to breake them: she warnesh them of excess, another study to excesse; the saith, that occess attice is good, though it be not costly, and they sware whelse it be deere, it is not comp.

She is here accounted for a flut that commeth not in her files, and the that bath not enery fallion hath no mans fanour. They that he most wanton are reputed most wife, and they that he the ideal liners, are demed the fluck loners. There is great quarrelling for beauty, but no question of honestic corrections, both momen and men haug fallen herein Court to such agreed ment, that they never larre about matters of religion, because they never means to reason of them. I have wished often times, raiser in the Countrey to spinne, then in the Countre

Strange

7H 2

Daunce.

baume, and truly a villate both better become a Payden, then a Lute, and fitter it is with the needle to platife howe to live, then with the pen to learne how to love.

The Empresse giveth ensample of vertue, and the Ladies bane no leisure to follow her. I have nothing else to write. Here is no god newes, as for had I have told sufficient: yet this I may above, that some there be which for their vertue veserue praise, but they are onely commended for their beauty: for this think Courtiers, that to be honest is a certain kind of Country morestie, but to be amable, the Courtly curties.

Tourt, which if I obtaine, I hall think it a goo reward for my fermice, to be found for my fermice, to be to well rio from such securitie, so, believe me, there is scarce one in Court that either search God, or meanth god. I thank the for the Boke thou didest send me, and as occasion thall serve. I will write to the.

Philaneus beginneth a little to litten to counfaile, I with him well, and the to, of whom to heare so much goo, it both not me a little goo. Pray so, me, as I bo so, the, and is opportunitie be offered, write to me.

#### Euphues to his friend Liuia.

Care Linia, Jam as glavto beare of the welfare, as forroinfull to unvertant the newes, and it both me as much
god that thou art recovered, as barme to thinke of those
that are not to be recured. Thou half latilified my requell, and answered my expectation. For I longed to know the
manners of women, and loked to have then wanton: I lyke
the well that thou wils not conteale their vanities, but I lone
that the bester that thou well and follow them: to reprove finne
is the figure of true policies, forenomice it; the part of homeltie,
All god men will account the wild for the truth, and happie
for thy tryall, sucher say, to abstaine from pleasure is the cheefest pietie, and I thinks in Court to refraine from vice is no
little vertue.

Strange

J. Unces

Strange it is , that the found epe biewing of the fore thould not be bimmed, that he that handleth Ditch Cholonet be befiled. that they that continue the Court Moule not be infected. And vet it is no great maruaile, for by experience we fer, that the As Damant cannot Daw Fron; if the Diamond lie by it, noz bice

allore the Courtier, if bertue be retained.

. Aleti

Thou praifelt the Empreffe for instituting god lawes, and greenell to fee them biolated by the Ladies. I am forry to think it knowld be fo, and I fight that it cannot be otherwise. Tomhere there is no beed taken of a commandement, there is finall hope to be loked for of amendment. Withere buty can have no their. beneftie can beare no fipme. They that cannot be enforced to obedience by authozitie, will never be won by favour, for being without feare, they commonly are boid of grace : and as far be they careleffe from bonour, his they be from aive, and as ready to befuife the and countaile of their Deres, as to contemne the god lawes of their Paince. But the breaking of lawes both not accuse the Empresse of vice, neither thall her making of them ercufe the Labies of banities. The Empette is no moze to be suspented of erring, then the Carpenter that buildeth the boule be accused because thenes baus broken it, or the Bint Maifter condemned for his come, because the Traptor hath clipped it. Certainly God will both reward the godly seale of the Prince, and reusnae the godleffe boings of the people. Pogeouer, thou faiff, that in the Court all be fluts that Choin not in filkes, and that the idleft liners are accounted the braueft louers, I cannot tell whether 3 thould rather laugh at their folly,02 lament their phrenite. neyther do I know whether the finne be greater in apparell which moneth to price, or in affection which entifeth to neuifones, the one cauleth them to forget themfelues, the o ther to forgoe their fences, each Do Deceine their foule. They that thinks one cannot be cleanly without price, will quicklie indge none to be honeft without pleafure, which is as hard to confeste, as to lay no meane to be without excelle : thou withest to be in the Country with thy outaffe, rather then to continue in the Court with thy delights. I cannot blame the. For Greece is TI 3

is as much to be coverned for learning, as the Court for brane, rie, and here maist thou line with as good report for thine hone. By, as they with renowme for their beauty. It is better to fpin with Penelope all night, then to fing with Helen all day.

Dufwitry in the Country is as much prailed, as honour in the Court. We think it as great minth to fing Blaimes, as you melody to chaunt Sonnets, and we account them as wife that kepe their owne Lands with credite, as you thole that get & thers linings by craft. Therfore if then wilt follow my aonice, and profecute thine owne betermination, thou halt come out of a warme Sunne, into Gede bleffing . Thou abbelt (I feare me alfo thon errett) that in the Court there be fome of great bertue, milebome, and fobrietie: if it be fo, I like it, and in that thou faveft it is fo. I believe it. It may be, and no Doubt it is in the Court, as in all Rivers, fome fifth, fome frogs, and as in all Darbens fome flowers, feme webs, and as in all tres, fome bloffoms, fome blaffs. Nylus beeteth the precious frome, and the poploned Servent. The Court may as well neurth bertuous Batrons as the lewo minion. Det this maketh me mule, that they fould rather be commended for their beauty, then for their vertue, which is an infallible argument, that the belights of the fleth are preferred before the bolines of the fpirit. Thou , fagt thou wilt fue to leave thy feruice, and I will pear for thy gos facceffe: when thou art come into the Country, I would have the first learne to forget all these things which thou has feene in the Court. I would Philaurus were of the mine to fozfake his youthfull course : but I am glad thou writch that he beginneth to amend his conditions : he runneth far that never returneth, and he finneth beauly that never repenteth. I would baue bim end, as Lucilla began, without bice, and not begin as the ended, without honeffie . I loue the man well, but yet ? cannot broke his manners, yet I conceine a god hope, that in his age be will be wife, for that in his youth I perceived him witty . We bath promited to come to Achens, which if he boe. I will to handle the matter that either he that abiure the Court for ever, or ablent himfelfe for a yeare. If I bring the one to vaffe.

paffe, he thall forgoe his olde courfe : if the other, forget his ill conditions . We that in Court will theine to reape wealth, and line waris to get worthip , muft gaine by god confcience, and clime by wildome, otherwise his thaift is but theft, where there is no regard of gathering, and his honouf but ambition, where there is no care but for promotion. Philaurus is to fimple to binder fand the wiles in Court, and to young to bindermine a nie by craft, pet bath he thowne himfelfe as far from honeffie, as he is from age, and as full of craft, as he is of courage . Afit were for the preferment and his amendment, I with you were both married: but if he should continue his folly, wherby thou thouldest fall from thy butie, I rather with you both buried. Salute him in my name, and halten his tourney, but fozget not thine owne. I have occasion to goe to Naples, that I may with moze freede arine in England, where I have heard of a woman that in all qualities excelleth any man. Which if it be fo, I thall think my labour as well bestowed, as Saba Did birs when the tranailed to fee Salomon. At my going if thou be in Naples, will bifft the: at my returne, I will tell the my iudgement. If Philaurus come this Winter, be thall in this my vilgrimace be a partner. A pleasant companion is a bait in a journey. The thall there as I beare, fee a Court Both braue in thew, and bet ter in fubftance, moze gallant Courtiers, moze godly consciues, as faire Lavies, and fairer conditions. But I will not bount before the vidory, nor sweare it is so, untill 3 fe it be so. Fares well, buto whom about all I with well.

I Have finished the first part of Euphues, whom nowe I left ready to crosse the Seasts England: if the wind send him a thost cut, you shall in the second part heare what newes her bringesh: I hope to have him returned within one Sommer. In the meane season I will stay so, him in the Country, and as some as he ariseth, you shall know of his comming.